

# Forgotten Books

— [www.forgottenbooks.com](http://www.forgottenbooks.com) —

Copyright © 2016 FB &c Ltd.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

# ESSENTIALS OF SPANISH GRAMMAR

BY

SAMUEL GARNER, PH.D.

FORMERLY PROFESSOR OF LANGUAGES IN THE U. S. NAVAL  
ACADEMY

NEW YORK--CINCINNATI--CHICAGO  
AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

**COPYRIGHT, 1911, BY  
SAMUEL GARNER**

**ENTERED AT STATIONERS' HALL, LONDON**

---

**Ess. of Span. Gram.**

**W. P. I**

# PREFACE

As the author's Spanish Grammar, published nearly ten years ago, has met with such marked favor with teachers of Spanish and still continues to hold its own, it was thought that a book along the same lines but containing less detail and, in some respects, simpler in its general treatment, would prove acceptable to those whose classes can not devote to the study of Spanish the time necessary to a mastery of the larger work. With this end in view, an endeavor has been made, in the present work, to treat only such features of the grammatical mechanism of the language as are essential for the reading of ordinary Spanish. As the teaching of the older book is believed to be sound in every way, the same treatment has been adhered to and most of the same material has been used, but it has been recast and simplified in many ways. The exercises are new throughout and, where convenient, have been incorporated in the text where they properly belong. These exercises cover all the verbs, regular as well as irregular, and, in this respect, will doubtless be found to be an improvement.

As there is already a sufficiency of available reading texts provided with vocabularies, and as most teachers naturally prefer to make their own selections, it was not deemed advisable to include any matter of that kind.

The method of using the book will be determined by each teacher to suit his particular conditions. In classes of mature students most chapters can be taken in one or two lessons. For less advanced classes the chapters may be divided into three or even four parts.

233670

Although it has become customary, in books for the teaching of the modern languages, to devote a portion of each lesson to so-called oral work, the intent being to teach conversation, nothing of the kind has been given in this book, because the author is convinced, after many years of experience in conversational methods, that, even when most of the lesson-period is given over to them, the results are often discouraging. There is no surer basis for the acquisition of a practical knowledge of a language than a thorough drill in its grammatical structure. In any event, ready-made conversational exercises will prove of but little avail. The active teacher, who wishes such work to be interesting and useful, will take the words of the lesson and develop them into a lively conversation between himself and his students, and, unless he has the energy to do this off-hand, he will find his efforts fruitless. By this it is not meant to discourage that kind of work. To have some of it will doubtless add variety and interest to the classroom work. For the teacher who has not a fluent practical command of the language I know of no better plan than to ask questions on the sentences of the Spanish exercises, the student answering by repeating these sentences. For instance, in the second exercise, the teacher might proceed thus:

¿Qué es el plural de *carácter y régimen*? and the student would answer: El plural de *carácter y régimen* es irregular: *caracteres y regímenes*.

TEACHER. ¿Son altos los palacios? — STUDENT. Sí, señor; los palacios son altos y están en un cerro.

TEACHER. ¿Está frío el pan? — STUDENT. Sí, señor; el pan está frío, pero es bueno.

The English exercises may be utilized for the same purpose by having the students translate them off-hand as they are read off by the teacher, after the sentences have been distributed among the members of the class, written by them on the board, corrected, and erased. This implies, of course, that

the student has been required to commit the vocabularies to memory.

As to the propriety of requiring a written translation of these exercises to be made by the student beforehand, teachers may differ; but there should be no difference of opinion in this regard, namely, that it is a waste of energy and time on the part of teachers to correct such translations and hand them back to their students with the hope that they will profit by the corrections. To be of any value as written exercises they should be put on the board as above indicated and corrected before the whole class. At least that has been the author's discouraging experience. Hence the plan indicated above.

**SAMUEL GARNER.**

**ANNAPOLIS, MD.**



# CONTENTS

|  | PAGES   |
|--|---------|
| <b>PREFACE</b> . . . . .   | 3-5     |
| <b>CONTENTS</b> . . . . .  | 7-8     |
| <b>ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION:</b>   |         |
| Alphabet . . . . .   | 1       |
| Vowels . . . . .   | 2-3     |
| Consonants . . . . .   | 4       |
| Miscellaneous . . . . .  | 5-7     |
| Syllabication . . . . .  | 8       |
| Accentuation . . . . .   | 9       |
| Punctuation and Capitals . . . . .   | 10-11   |
| <b>LECCIÓN PRIMERA: Articles. Declension. Tener</b> . . . . .                        | 12-16   |
| <b>LECCIÓN SEGUNDA: Number. Ser and Estar</b> . . . . .                              | 17-20   |
| <b>LECCIÓN TERCERA: Gender</b> . . . . .   | 21-25   |
| <b>LECCIÓN CUARTA: Adjectives. Apocopation</b> . . . . .                             | 26-30   |
| <b>LECCIÓN QUINTA: Position of Adjectives. Agreement of Adjectives</b>               | 31-37   |
| <b>LECCIÓN SEXTA: Comparison of Adjectives</b> . . . . .                             | 38-44   |
| <b>LECCIÓN SÉPTIMA: Qualifying Suffixes: Augmentatives and Diminutives</b> . . . . . | 45-50   |
| <b>LECCIÓN OCTAVA: Numerals: Cardinals and Ordinals. Fractions</b> .                 | 51-57   |
| <b>LECCIÓN NONA: Personal Pronouns</b> . . . . .                                     | 58-64   |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMA: Possessive Adjectives</b> . . . . .                               | 65-73   |
| <b>LECCIÓN UNDÉCIMA: Possessive Pronouns</b> . . . . .                               | 74-79   |
| <b>LECCIÓN DUODÉCIMA: Demonstratives</b> . . . . .                                   | 80-87   |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMOTERCIA: Relative Pronouns</b> . . . . .                             | 88-97   |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMOCUARTA: Interrogative Pronouns</b> . . . . .                        | 98-107  |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMOQUINTA: Indefinite Pronouns</b> . . . . .                           | 108-119 |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMOSEXTA: Indefinite Adjectives</b> . . . . .                          | 120-139 |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMOSÉPTIMA: Adverbs. Comparison of Adverbs</b> .                       | 140-149 |
| <b>LECCIÓN DÉCIMOCTAVA: Prepositions á, de, and en</b> . . . . .                     | 150-154 |



|  | SECTIONS |
|--|----------|
| LECCIÓN DÉCIMOONONA: Prepositions <b>por</b> and <b>para</b> . . . . . | 155-158  |
| LECCIÓN VIGÉSIMA: Conjunctions. Interjections . . . . .                | 159-162  |
| XXI. The Verb. Auxiliary Verbs . . . . .                               | 163-168  |
| XXII. Regular Verbs . . . . .  | 169-170  |
| XXIII. Orthographic Changes . . . . .                                  | 171      |
| XXIV. Memory-aids to learning the Conjugations                         | 172-173  |
| XXV. Passive Voice . . . . .   | 174-175  |
| XXVI. Reflexive Verbs . . . . .  | 176-180  |
| XXVII. Impersonal Verbs . . . . .                                      | 181      |
| XXVIII. Irregular Verbs . . . . .                                      | 182-248  |
| XXIX. Syntax: Definite Article . . . . .                               | 249-253  |
| XXX-XXXI. Syntax: Indefinite Article . . . . .                         | 254-258  |
| XXXII. Syntax: Cases of Nouns and Pronouns .                           | 259-266  |
| XXXIII. Syntax of the Verb . . . . .                                   | 267-273  |
| XXXIV-XXXV. Syntax: Tenses of the Indicative . . . .                   | 274-283  |
| XXXVI. Syntax: Tenses of the Indicative.—Im-<br>perative . . . . .     | 284-290  |
| XXXVII-XXXVIII. Syntax: The Subjunctive . . . . .                      | 291-304  |
| XXXIX. Syntax: The Infinitive . . . . .                                | 305-311  |
| XL. Syntax: Participles and Gerund . . . . .                           | 312-318  |
| XLI-XLVIII. Spanish Exercises . . . . .                                | 319-334  |
| XLIX. Spanish Abbreviations . . . . .                                  | 335      |
| Epistolary Formalities . . . . .                                       | 336-339  |
| Letters and Business Forms . . . . .                                   | 340      |
|  | PAGES    |
| SPANISH VOCABULARY . . . . .   | 199-218  |
| ENGLISH VOCABULARY . . . . .   | 219-229  |
| INDEX . . . . .  | 231-232  |

# ESSENTIALS OF SPANISH GRAMMAR

## ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION

1. The following thirty characters compose the Spanish alphabet: —

a, b, c, ch, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, ll, m, n, ñ, o, p, q, r, rr,  
s, t, u, v, w, x, y, z

### VOWELS

2. Most English vowels are pronounced as diphthongs. This must be carefully avoided in Spanish, and a clear simple sound given to each vowel. In the illustrative examples hereafter given, the vowel having the stress (accent) is in heavy type.

a. Strong { a varies between *a* in *father* and *a* in *am*: **parta**, **acta**  
e varies between *a* in *late* and *e* in *where*: **teme**, **jefe**  
o varies between *o* in *go* and *o* in *loft*: **amó**, **tapón**

b. Weak { i (**y**) varies between *i* in *fatigue* and *i* in *kin*: **mi**, **rey**, **pintó**  
u varies between *u* in *rule* and *u* in *full*: **uno**, **buscó**  
**y** is a vowel only in the conjunction *y* (and), and when final:  
**rey**.

REMARKS. — The quality of the vowels is largely determined by contiguous consonants, by the stress accent, or by their relative position in the word. For instance: —

**a**, in the closed\* syllable *par*, of *parto*, is more open than **a**, in the open syllable *pa*, of *parió*. In *parto* **a** is nearly as open as **a** in *father*; in *parió* **a** differs but slightly from **a** in *am*.

\* A syllable is closed when it ends in a consonant (as **an**-tes, **del**), and open when it ends in a vowel (as **de**, **pa**-ta).

**e** is generally closed in open syllables as, be-be-de-ro, Pe-pe, pie, and open in closed syllables and before *ll* and *rr*, as men-te, res-to, miel, bello, tierra.

**o** is never so narrow as *o* in *go*, but approaches that sound in open stressed syllables or when final, as bo-ca, temió, amo, to-do. In closed syllables it is similar to the *o* of *loft*, as ton-to, los, licor, tapón, cor-to.

**i**, when it receives the syllabic accent or is in an open syllable, is like *i* in *fatigue*, as miro, tino, pinto, I-nés, i-nocente; otherwise it is nearly as open as *i* in *kin*, as pintó, ingrato, infanta. The difference, however, is rather slight.

**u**, under the influence of the accent or in an open syllable, is similar to the *u* of *rule*, as curul, cumbre, cuna, betún; in other cases it is more like the *u* of *full*, as buscó, untar, cultivo. Care should be taken never to pronounce the Spanish *u* as *u* in English *use*.

**3. Diphthongs and triphthongs** are pronounced in one uninterrupted impulse of the voice, each vowel being distinctly heard.

*a. Diphthongs of strong and weak vowels.* In these combinations the strong vowel receives the chief stress in tonic syllables, unless the weak vowel has the written accent; in other cases the two vowels are passed over without special stress, as baile, traído, but bailar.

**ai, ay** as in baile, ay

**au** as in aula

**ei, ey** as in veinte, ley

**eu** as in deuda

**oi, oy** as in oigo, hoy

**ou** as in bou

**ia** as in diario

**ie** as in miel

**io** as in dios

**ua** as in cuando

**ue** as in luego

**uo** as in cuota

**NOTE.** — The Spanish Academy maintains that two strong vowels never form a diphthong. That is true where one bears the tonic accent, as poeta; but in such words as línea, área, *ea* is as much a diphthong as *io* in diario.

*b. Diphthongs of two weak vowels:* —

**iu** as in diurno

**ui, uy** as in ruin, muy

Note here that the second vowel always bears the stress, unless the first has the written accent, as buitre, but flúido; also that, unless

the syllable is tonic, both vowels are evenly pronounced without special stress, as *diuturno*, *cuidado*.

*c. Triphthongs.* These are formed by a stressed strong vowel between two weak vowels: —

*iai* as in *estudiáis*

*uai, uay* as in *amortiguáis, guay*

*iei* as in *despreciéis*

*uei, uey* as in *desagüéis, buey*

## CONSONANTS

4. While Spanish vowels are more clearly uttered than the English, the reverse is true of the consonants, many of which are pronounced very lightly and indistinctly and in some cases even dropped altogether. We shall group them in accordance with their relation to the vocal organs.

### *a. LABIALS (Lip Sounds)*

*v* as in *vivo*

*p* as in *pavo*

*f* as in *faena*

*m* as in *mamá*

*b* as in *bebo*

*w* as in *Wéber, Windsor*

**REMARKS.** — Bring the lips lightly together in the middle, keeping the corners slightly apart. If then the corresponding English letters are uttered, they will give approximately the Spanish sounds. It is commonly said that *b* and *v* are identical sounds, and this is the general practice; but the best Spanish authorities insist that *v* as well as *f* should be pronounced with the upper teeth against the lower lips.

As to *w*, which occurs in foreign words, it is pronounced either as Spanish *v* or the pronunciation of the foreign tongue is imitated, as Germ. wagon = *vagón*; Eng. Washington = *Uáshington*.

### *b. DENTO-LINGUALS (Tooth-Tongue Sounds)*

*c* before *e* and *i* } as *th* in *thin*: { *cebo, ciencia*  
*z* in all positions } { *zapa, baza*

*ch* as *ch* in *church*: *mucho, muchacho*

*d* nearly as *d* in *did*, approximating *th* of *the*: *dedo, dividir*

*l* as *l* in *let*: *lecho, alma*

*ll* as *lli* in *million*: *bello, llamo*

*n* as *n* in *bone*: *uno, mente*

**n** before hard *g* and *c* and *qu* as *n* in *ring*: *tengo*, *blanco*, *conque*  
**ñ\*** (*n* with the *tilde*) as *ni* in *union*: *niño*, *ñiquiñaque*  
**t** as *t* in *ten*: *todo*, *entonces*

REMARKS. — Excepting *n* before hard *g* and *c* and *qu*, the above sounds differ appreciably from the corresponding English sounds in that, in the former, the tongue touches the lower edge of the upper teeth, while, in the latter, it is placed against the palate just back of the teeth.

**d** is the most slighted of all the consonants. Initial or between vowels, as in *deuda*, it is nearly the *th* of *the*: final it is either silent or like the *th* of *thin*, as *usté* for *usted*, *mitad* (*pr.* *meetath*); lastly it is frequently dropped between two vowels, as *too* and *to* for *todo*, *naa* and *na* for *nada*, *vivío* for *vivido*, *dao* for *dado*. These contractions should be avoided.

### c. ASPIRATES

|   |  |                               |   |  |
|---|--|-------------------------------|---|--|
| { | <b>g</b> before <i>e</i> and <i>i</i>                          | } as <i>h</i> in <i>hat</i> : | { | <i>agente</i> , <i>gime</i>              |
|   | <b>j</b> in all positions                                      |                               |   | <i>bajo</i> , <i>junto</i> , <i>jefe</i> |
|   | <b>h</b> silent in all positions: <i>ahora</i> , <i>hablar</i> |                               |   |  |

NOTE. — The above sound of *g* and *j* is the *ch* of German *ach*, or a strongly aspirated English *h*.

### d. GUTTURALS (Throat Sounds)

|  |   |   |                               |   |  |
|--|---|---|-------------------------------|---|--|
| c  | { | before <i>a</i> , <i>o</i> , <i>u</i> , and | } as <i>c</i> in <i>cat</i> : | { | <i>cabo</i> , <i>codo</i> , <i>acción</i> , <i>frac</i>        |
|  |   | before a consonant<br>and final             |                               |   | <i>quedo</i> , <i>aquí</i><br><i>kiosko</i> , <i>kilómetro</i> |
| √  | { | <b>qu</b> before <i>e</i> , <i>i</i>        | }                             | } |  |
|  |   | <b>k</b> in all positions                   |                               |   |  |
| <b>cu=kw</b> : <i>cuando</i> , <i>cuidado</i> , <i>cuerno</i> , <i>cuota</i> |   |   |                               |   |  |
| g  | { | before <i>a</i> , <i>o</i> , <i>u</i> , and | } as <i>g</i> in <i>go</i> :  | { | <i>gato</i> , <i>gota</i> , <i>guapo</i> , <i>grito</i> ,      |
|  |   | before a consonant<br>and final             |                               |   | <i>zigzag</i>  |
|  |   | <b>gu</b> before <i>e</i> , <i>i</i>        |                               |   | <i>sigue</i> , <i>gufa</i>                                     |

NOTE. — When the *u* of *gue* and *gui* is pronounced, it receives the diaeresis: *antigüedad*, *lingüística*.

\* Place the tip of the tongue against the lower edge of the upper teeth.

## e. LIQUIDS (Tongue Trills)

|  |  |                   |   |
|--|--|-------------------|---|
| r  | { between vowels and<br>in most other<br>positions } | slightly trilled: | { pero, amor, perla, crema,<br>brote, parto, arpa,<br>árbol |
| r initial or<br>after <i>l, n, s</i><br>rr |  |                   |   |

NOTE. — The finals *ar, er, ir, or, ur* are uttered with a short, slight trill. Observe also that the Spanish *r* is never guttural but is made in the forward part of the mouth, the tongue vibrating against the palate just back of the upper teeth.

## f. s, x, y

**s** is always *s* in *base*: *casa, sastré*.

**x** is a double consonant, *c+s*, and the general teaching is that it should be so pronounced; but even careful speakers are inclined to neglect the *c*-element, saying *esplicar, estraño* for *explicar, extraño*. The Spanish Academy condemns this usage, and the student should adopt the pure *x*-sound, as in *laxo, convexo, examen*.

**y** is a consonant only when initial or between two vowels and is *y* in *yes*: *yeso, cayó*.

## MISCELLANEOUS

**5. Double consonants.** Besides *ch, ll, rr*, which are not regarded as double letters, *c* and *n* occur double, and both are pronounced. In *acción*, for instance, the first *c* has the value of *k*, and the second that of *th* in *thin*; hence akthión. When *nn* occurs, both should be uttered, especially if *in* initial is negative, as *innoble, innumerable, innegable, innecesario*. Initial *imm* of English words appears in Spanish as *inm*, as *inmoral, inmóvil*.

**6. Elision or contraction.** In colloquial discourse, but not in writing (except by careless spellers), vowels coming into contact are merged into a single sound or diphthong: *de esta manera, pr. desta manera; ¿cómo está usted? pr. cómo estáusté; no*

le he visto, *pr.* no le visto; ¿qué está haciendo? *pr.* ¿qué está haciendo; no la ama ahora, *pr.* no la ama ahora.

7. **Dialectic peculiarities** are common over all Spain and in the Spanish settlements in the New World, but the student is not recommended to adopt them in his pronunciation.

**c** (before *e* and *i*) is pronounced like *s*: *coser* for *cocer*.

**c** and **p** before *t* are assimilated, both *t*'s being sounded: *perfetto* for *perfecto*; *ratto* for *rapto*.

**d** final and between vowels is dropped: *verdá* for *verdad*, *toa* for *toda*, *amao* for *amado*.

**g** is dropped before *u* or takes the place of *b*: *aua* for *agua*, *güeno* for *bueno*.

**n** final is pronounced as though followed by *g*: *Dong Juang* for *Don Juan*.

**ll** as *y* (consonant) or as English *j*: *cabayo* for *caballo*, *jorar* for *llorar*.

**s** is dropped, especially when final or before consonants: *pue* for *pues*, ¿cómo etá uté? for ¿cómo está usted?; *la mima cosas* for *las mismas cosas*.

**y** is pronounced as English *j*: *jo*, *jeso* for *yo*, *yeso*.

**z** and **s** are interchanged: ¿cómo eztá ozté? for ¿cómo está usted?; *casar* for *cazar*.

### SYLLABICATION

8. In the division of words into syllables the following rules should be observed.

*a.* A single consonant and *ch*, *ll*, and *rr* go with the following vowel: *mo-ti-vo*, *mu-cha-cho*, *ba-ta-lla*, *ba-rro*.

*b.* Two or more consonants between vowels are separated: *al-ma*, *cons-tan-te*; but *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *p*, and a following *l* or *r* combine with the following vowel: *li-bro*, *a-cre*, *pu-drir*, *i-gle-sia*, *a-pla-ca-ble*. *T* and *r* combine, but *t* and *l* separate: *a-troz*, *a-trás*; but *at-le-ta*, *At-lan-te*.

*c.* The prefixes *des*, *ab*, *sub*, when felt as such, are excepted from

the above rules: *des-unir*, *ab-rogar*, *sub-arrendar*; but *su-bir*, *a-bundar*. Observe also *nos-otros*, *vos-otros*.

*d.* The vowels may be separated only when they form distinct syllables: *po-e-ta*, *ba-úl*; but *bue-no*, *tie-ne*.

## ACCENTUATION

9. The place of the tonic or stress accent in Spanish is easily learned from a few simple rules:—

*a.* Words ending in *y* or a consonant, except *n* or *s*, have the stress on the last syllable: *animal*, *sencillez*, *Echegaray*.

*b.* Words ending in a simple vowel or diphthong, or in *n* or *s*, are accented on the next to the last syllable: *padre*, *astucia*, *serio*, *antiguo*, *joven*, *lunes*.

*c.* All words not embraced under these two rules must bear the written accent on the emphatic syllable: *rincón*, *jóvenes*, *alférez*, *además*, *navío*, *astronomía*, *envíe*, *continúo*.

*d.* Note that many words, though not requiring the written accent by rule *c*, receive it, however, to distinguish them graphically from other words of the same form but of different meaning, while a few others receive it for no particular reason: *cómo* (*how?*), *como* (*as*), *tú* (*thou*), *tu* (*thy*), and *é* (*and*), *á* (*to*).

*e.* Note further that all syllables preceding and following the tonic syllable should be evenly pronounced, there being scarcely any secondary accent in Spanish: *tipográfico*, *mentiroso*. From this must be excepted all compounds whose parts are felt as separate words: *jurisconsulto*, *sobremanera*, *salvaguardia*. Here must also be included all adverbs compounded with an adjective and the noun *mente* (=Eng. *-ly*): *solamente*, *medianamente*.

## PUNCTUATION AND CAPITALS

10. **Punctuation.** The only differences that need be noted here are that the points ! and ? are placed both at the beginning (inverted ; ¿) and at the end of exclamatory and interrogative sentences, and that suspension points (. . .) are used to indicate a pause in or the breaking off of a thought.



**11. Capitals.** Unlike the English, the Spanish writes with small initials the pronoun *yo* (*I*), except at the beginning of a sentence, the names of the months and days, and proper adjectives, both as adjectives (*la lengua española, the Spanish language*) and as nouns (*los españoles, the Spaniards*).

## LECCIÓN PRIMERA

**12. Articles.** There are, in Spanish, two articles, the definite and the indefinite, and they vary in form for gender and number. The forms of the definite are:—

|                  | SINGULAR | PLURAL    |
|------------------|----------|-----------|
| <i>Masculine</i> | el       | los       |
| <i>Feminine</i>  | la       | las       |
| > <i>Neuter</i>  | lo       | (wanting) |

**NOTE.** — Before feminine singular nouns beginning with tonic *a* or *ha*, *el*, for euphony, takes the place of *la*: *el alma, the soul*; *el haba, the bean*. Where an adjective precedes the noun, or the noun is a proper name, the substitution is not made: *la alta torre, the high tower*; *la Ángela, that (girl) Angela* (depreciative or familiar).

### a. Indefinite

|                   | SINGULAR | PLURAL  |
|-------------------|----------|---|
| <i>Masculine</i>  | un(o),   | unos, } <i>some, a few,</i><br>unas, } <i>several</i> |
| • <i>Feminine</i> | una,     |   |

**NOTE.** — It is quite common to use *un* before nouns of the above category (12, NOTE): *un águila, an eagle*; *un hacha, an ax*. But before an adjective, used substantively, neither the masculine nor feminine is abbreviated: *un libro, a book*; *uno bueno, a good one*; *un ave, a bird*; *una buena, a good one*.

**13. Declension.** Nouns have no case endings, but Spaniards make a declension of their nouns by means of prepositions and the definite article, *de el* being contracted to *del* and *á el* to *al*.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

**libro, m.** book  
**madre, f.** mother  
**manzana, f.** apple  
**mi, pl. mis, my**  
**muchacha, f.** girl  
**niño, m.** child  
**no, no, not**  
**padre, m.** father

**pluma, f.** pen  
**¿qué? what?**  
**reina, f.** queen  
**rey, m.** king  
**rosa, f.** rose  
**tía, f.** aunt  
**tío, m.** uncle  
**y, and**

## 16.

## Ejercicio Primero

1. Yo tengo una rosa; ¿qué tienes tú? 2. Tengo una manzana. 3. ¿Tiene el niño un libro? No, tiene un lápiz. 4. No tenemos una casa. 5. Vosotros tenéis un caballo. 6. El rey y la reina tienen un amigo. 7. Ellos tienen un huevo y ellas (*fem.*) una pluma.

8. The father and the mother. 9. He has a sister and she has a brother. 10. My uncle is the brother of my father. 11. My aunt is my mother's sister. 12. He has the man's knife. 13. She has not the girl's flower. 14. The rose is a flower, and the apple is not a flower. 15. What hast thou? 16. [I\*] have the pen of my brother. 17. What have you? 18. We have the men's knife. 19. They hold the horse (see 14).

## LECCIÓN SEGUNDA

**17. Number.** Nouns and adjectives ending in an unstressed vowel (except *y*) take *s* in the plural; those ending in *y* or a consonant take *es*. *Z* final changes to *c* before *es*.

el amigo, *the friend*

la mano, *the hand*

el buey, *the ox*

el animal, *the animal*

la cruz, *the cross*

los amigos, *the friends*

las manos, *the hands*

los bueyes, *the oxen*

los animales, *the animals*

las cruces, *the crosses*

\* Words in brackets [ ] should not be translated.

a. There are some exceptions to the above general rule, but they are best learned by practice.

b. Some masculine nouns, besides their regular plural meaning, frequently indicate both sexes of pairs naturally associated; as, los padres, *the fathers* or *the father and mother*. And so: los reyes, *the king and queen*; los duques, *the duke and duchess*.

Note that when any noun, not stressed on its last syllable, takes *es*, its tonic vowel must be marked in the plural: joven, *young man*, jóvenes, *young men*. Also that a noun having the written accent on its last vowel rejects the accent in the plural, unless the vowel is weak (*i, u*): nación, *nation*, naciones, *nations*; bajá, *pasha*, bajaes, *pashas*; but rubí, *ruby*, rubíes, *rubies*.

18. Ser and estar, *to be*, are irregular in their conjugations.

### Present Indicative

| SINGULAR                             | PLURAL                                   |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| yo soy, estoy, <i>I am</i>           | nosotros somos, estamos, <i>we are</i>   |
| tú eres, estás, <i>thou art</i>      | vosotros sois, estáis, <i>you are</i>    |
| usted es, está, <i>you are</i>       | ustedes son, están, <i>you are</i>       |
| él, ella es, está, <i>he, she is</i> | ellos, ellas son, están, <i>they are</i> |

a. *Usted*, pl. *ustedes*, are the polite forms of address. They are abbreviated to *V.* or *Vd.* and *VV.* or *Vds.*

b. The above verbs both mean *to be*. Ser expresses what is *permanent, characteristic, essential*, while estar indicates *position, state, condition*, what is *transitory, changeable*, etc.

19.

|                               |  |
|-------------------------------|--|
| alto, -a, high                | ¿dónde? where?                                   |
| animal, <i>m.</i> animal      | dos, two   |
| aquí, here                    | en, in   |
| bueno, -a, good               | hierro, <i>m.</i> iron                           |
| buey, <i>m.</i> ox            | irregular, irregular                             |
| caliente, hot                 | jardín, <i>m.</i> garden                         |
| carácter, <i>m.</i> character | lirio, <i>m.</i> lily                            |
| cerro, <i>m.</i> hill         | malo, -a ( <i>mal</i> ), bad, evil, sick, unwell |
| día, <i>m.</i> day            | míos, my   |
| doméstico, -a, domestic       |  |

**muy**, very

**palacio**, *m.* palace

**pan**, *m.* bread

**pero**, but

**plural**, *m.* plural

**poco**, *-a*, little, short, few

**por**, for

**¿quién?** who?

**régimen**, *m.* system, diet

**sí**, yes

**solo**, *-a*, alone

**viejo**, *-a*, old

## 20.

## Ejercicio Dos

1. El plural de *carácter* y *régimen* es irregular: *caracteres* y *regímenes*. 2. Los palacios son altos y están en un cerro. 3. El pan está frío, pero es bueno. 4. ¿Dónde están VV., amigos míos? Aquí estamos. 5. Yo no estoy solo; tengo aquí mis hermanas. 6. Mis hermanos están en casa de mi tío. 7. Los bueyes son animales domésticos (26). 8. Mi padre es viejo y está muy malo.

9. Yes, he is very wicked, but he is my brother. 10. The iron is hot. 11. Who is he? He is my uncle. 12. Where is she? She is in the garden. 13. The rose and the lily are flowers. 14. They are friends of my aunt. 15. The horse and the ox are domestic animals (20, 7).

## LECCIÓN TERCERA

21. **Gender.** The names of living beings are masculine or feminine according to sex: —

el hombre, *the man*

el abuelo, *the grandfather*

el hijo, *the son*

la mujer, *the woman*

la abuela, *the grandmother*

la hija, *the daughter*

22. Nouns having no sex are grammatically masculine when they end in *o*, and feminine when they end in *a*: —

el vino, *wine*

el viento, *wind*

el verano, *summer*

la comida, *dinner*

la línea, *line*

la primavera, *spring*

a. **Exceptions.** La mano, *hand*; la nao, *ship*; el día, *day*; and a few nouns ending in **-ma** and **-ta**: el drama, *drama*; el clima, *climate*; el planeta, *planet*, etc.

b. No certain rule can be given for nouns ending in a consonant, save that those having the terminations **-ión**, **-dad**, **-tad**, **-tud**, **-umbre**, and **-ez** are uniformly feminine: la creación, *creation*; la bondad, *goodness*; la mitad, *half*; la virtud, *virtue*; la cumbre, *top*; la vejez, *old age*.

Note that, while in some cases there are distinct forms for masculine and feminine nouns, as el caballo, *the horse*, la yegua, *the mare*, in many others the feminine is formed by changing the ending of the masculine: el viudo, *the widower*, la viuda, *the widow*; el señor, *the gentleman*, la señora, *the lady*; el sastre, *the tailor*, la sastra, *the tailoress or tailor's wife*; el conde, *the count*, la condesa, *the countess*.

23. Learn the present indicative of the first conjugation, 170.

24.

|  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| á, to, at                                    | hablar, to speak                    |
| carta, <i>f.</i> letter                      | infinitivo, <i>m.</i> infinitive    |
| casa, <i>f.</i> house, home; en ———, at home | lengua, <i>f.</i> language          |
| clase, <i>f.</i> class                       | mucho, <b>-a</b> , much, many       |
| como, like                                   | papel, <i>m.</i> paper              |
| comprar, to buy                              | persona, <i>f.</i> person           |
| conjugación, <i>f.</i> conjugation           | por, through, for, by               |
| conjugado, <b>-a</b> , conjugated            | presidente, <i>m.</i> president     |
| conocido, <b>-a</b> , known                  | primero, <b>-a</b> , first          |
| correctamente, correctly                     | raramente, rarely                   |
| desear, to desire, wish                      | regular, regular                    |
| discípulo, <i>m.</i> scholar                 | según, according to                 |
| enseñar, to teach                            | señor, <i>m.</i> Mr., sir           |
| escribir, to write                           | si, if                              |
| España, <i>f.</i> Spain                      | su, sus, his, her, its, their, your |
| español, <i>m.</i> Spanish                   | terminación, <i>f.</i> ending       |
| estudiar, to study                           | tinta, <i>f.</i> ink                |
| extranjero, <b>-a</b> , foreign              | tres, three                         |
| francés, <i>m.</i> French                    | ver, to see                         |
| gramática, <i>f.</i> grammar                 | verbo, <i>m.</i> verb               |
|  | viajar, to travel                   |

25.

## Ejercicio Tres

1. ¿Qué lengua habla usted? 2. Yo hablo el español. 3. ¿Qué lengua hablan VV., señor Blanco? 4. Hablamos mi mujer y yo el francés. 5. Los franceses hablan raramente lenguas extranjeras (26). 6. ¿Qué compras tú? — Compro papel y tinta para escribir una carta. 7. Los discípulos estudian mucho sus lecciones. 8. La gramática enseña á hablar correctamente una lengua.

9. In Spanish the regular<sup>2</sup>\* verbs<sup>1</sup> (26, c) have three conjugations, known by the endings of the infinitives. 10. We conjugate a regular<sup>2</sup> verb<sup>1</sup> according to its conjugation. 11. *Trabajar* (to work) is [a] verb of the first conjugation and is conjugated like *hablar*. 12. The count and the countess are traveling through Spain. 13. If you (*vosotros*) wish to see the (13, b) President, he is not at home. 14. Do you (*usted*) travel much? — No, I do not travel much. 15. The two persons in the garden are the mother and father (17, b) of my friend.

## LECCIÓN CUARTA

**26. Adjectives.** Spanish adjectives usually vary in form for gender and number. They may be arranged, for the most part, in three groups:—

*a.* Those ending in *o*, *ete*, *ote* form the feminine by changing the last vowel to *a*:—

| SINGULAR                            | PLURAL                 |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------|
| blanco, blanca, <i>white</i>        | blancos, blancas       |
| regordete, <i>-a, fat and plump</i> | regordetes, regordetas |
| grandote, <i>-a, rather big</i>     | grandotes, grandotas   |

\* In this and the following exercises small figures to the right of a series of words indicate the order in which these words should be placed, and a word in brackets should be omitted in translating.

b. Those in *án, ón, or* (except comparatives in *or*) and proper adjectives in *és*, rejecting the written accent of the masculine, add *a*: —

|                                |                        |
|--------------------------------|------------------------|
| · holgazán, -a, <i>lazy</i>    | holgazanes, holgazanas |
| · burlón, -a, <i>roguish</i>   | burlones, burlonas     |
| traidor, -a, <i>traitorous</i> | traidores, traidoras   |
| inglés, -a, <i>English</i>     | ingleses, inglesas     |

NOTE. — *Español* and *andaluz* (Andalusian) add *a* for the feminine.

c. Adjectives ending in *a, e, í, el, en, un, r,* and *z* have one form for both genders: —

|  |                  |
|--|------------------|
| agrícola, <i>agricultural</i>              | agrícolas        |
| verde, <i>green</i>                        | verdes           |
| carmesí, <i>crimson</i>                    | carmesíes        |
| fiel, <i>faithful</i> ; azul, <i>blue</i>  | fieles, azules   |
| joven, <i>young</i> ; común, <i>common</i> | jóvenes, comunes |
| familiar, <i>familiar</i>                  | familiares       |
| feliz, <i>happy</i>                        | felices (17)     |

NOTE. — Cada, *each, every*, and demás, *other, remaining*, are invariable: cada seis días, *every six days*; los demás, *the others, rest*.

**27. Apocopation.** The following adjectives drop *o* (and sometimes *a*) when they stand immediately before a noun; otherwise the full forms are used: —

|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| alguno, -a, <i>some, any</i>                    | ninguno, -a, <i>no, not any, none</i> |
| · bueno, -a, <i>good</i> ; malo, -a, <i>bad</i> | primero, -a, <i>first</i>             |
| postrero, -a, <i>latter, last</i>               | tercero, -a, <i>third</i>             |

a. Santo, *saint*, loses its last syllable before most of the saints' names: San Pablo, San Pedro, San Juan; but Santo Tomás, Santo Domingo.

b. Grande, *great*, drops its last syllable before nouns beginning with a consonant: un gran poeta, *a great poet*; but preferably: un grande orador, *a great orator*. Similarly cualquiera, *whatever, any*, may lose its *a*: cualquier casa (*house*).

**28.** Learn the present indicative of the second conjugation, 170, and read carefully 31, *a, b*.



## 29.

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| amarillo, -a, yellow                | mejor, better                            |
| aprender, to learn                  | menudo, -a, small, minute; á —, often    |
| árbol, <i>m.</i> tree               | nunca, never                             |
| arteria, <i>f.</i> artery           | ó, or                                    |
| atado, -a, tied                     | otoño, <i>m.</i> autumn                  |
| color, <i>m.</i> color              | pequeño, -a, small                       |
| con, with                           | perro, <i>m.</i> dog                     |
| contento, -a, satisfied             | poeta, <i>m.</i> poet                    |
| correr, to run                      | prisa, <i>f.</i> haste; más de —, faster |
| después, afterward; — de, after     | que, than                                |
| domicilio, <i>m.</i> shelter, house | resultado, <i>m.</i> result              |
| elección, <i>f.</i> election        | rojizo, -a, reddish                      |
| expreso, -a, express                | rojo, -a, red.                           |
| hoja, <i>f.</i> leaf                | sangre, <i>f.</i> blood                  |
| Inglaterra, <i>f.</i> England       | suerte, <i>f.</i> lot, luck              |
| invierno, <i>m.</i> winter          | trabajoso, -a, laborious                 |
| llegar, to arrive                   | tren, <i>m.</i> train                    |
| llevar, to lead, carry off          | vario, -a, various                       |
| Madrid, Madrid                      | vena, <i>f.</i> vein                     |
| mano, <i>f.</i> hand                | vida, <i>f.</i> life                     |

## 30.

## Ejercicio Cuatro

1. Ella tiene las manos (22, a) pequeñas y blancas y los ojos azules y burlones. 2. Las muchachas holgazanas aprenden muy poco. 3. No temo el resultado de las elecciones. 4. Las clases agrícolas llevan una vida trabajosa. 5. La sangre corre por todas las venas y arterias. 6. Mi buen amigo llega por el primer tren de Madrid. 7. Un gran poeta no es á menudo un grande orador. 8. Cualquiera domicilio es mejor que ningún domicilio.

9. The rose is white, yellow, or red; the other flowers are of various<sup>2</sup> colors<sup>1</sup>. 10. [They] speak the Spanish<sup>2</sup> language<sup>1</sup> in Spain and the English in England. 11. The leaves of (the)\* trees are green in (the) spring and in (the) summer (22); in (the) autumn they are crimson or reddish; but in (the) winter the trees [do] not have any<sup>2</sup> leaves<sup>1</sup>. 12. Those who (*los que*)

\* All words in parentheses must be translated.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



**34. Agreement of adjectives.** We have already learned the general rule that adjectives agree in gender and number with the nouns or pronouns they determine, but we must provide for the various combinations that may arise in the sentence, namely: —

*a.* Two or more nouns in the singular require the adjective to be in the plural: *el tío y el padre son ricos, the uncle and the father are rich.*

*b.* When the nouns are of different genders, the masculine plural is used: *tanto el hijo como la hija son caritativos, the son as well as the daughter are charitable.*

*c.* But where the nouns denote things or ideas, the adjective may agree in gender with the nearest noun: *vanas son mis esperanzas y temores, vain are my hopes and fears; la igualdad de nuestro linaje y riquezas, the equality of our lineage and riches.*

*d.* Several adjectives in the singular may qualify distributively a plural noun: *los siglos décimonono y vigésimo, the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.*

NOTE. — Other cases may arise, but they are best learned by observation.

**35. Learn the present indicative of the third conjugation, 170.**

### 36.

**agradar, to please**

**ahora, now**

**alemán, -a (26, b), German**

**autor, m. author**

**billete, m. bill, note**

**Bretaña, f. Britain**

**Burgos, Burgos**

**carne, f. meat**

**Cartagena, Cartagena**

**comedor, m. dining room**

**¿cuándo? when?**

**cumplir con, to fulfill**

**donde, where**

**esperar, to hope**

**este, esta, estos, estas, this, these**

**forma, f. shape, form**

**imperio, m. empire**

**italiano, -a, Italian**

**lápiz, m. pencil (17)**

**largo, -a, long**

**mañana, f. morning**

**más, more**

**me, me**

**mesa, f. table**

**música, f. music**

**niñito, m. little child**

**ocho**, eight; **las** —, eight o'clock  
**ofender**, to offend  
**partir**, to set out, depart  
**promesa**, *f.* promise  
**querido**, -a, dear  
**redondo**, -a, round  
**salir**, to set out, start

**serio**, -a, serious  
**sufrir**, to suffer  
**tan**, so  
**tendero**, *m.* shopkeeper  
**todo**, -a, all, every; — **el mundo**,  
 everybody  
**vender**, to sell

## 37.

## Ejercicio Cinco

1. La mesa de nuestro comedor tiene una forma redonda.  
 2. La música alemana es más seria que la italiana. 3. Mi hija amada vive en Cartagena. 4. Tengo un deseo ardiente de salir para Burgos, donde viven mis padres (17, *b*). 5. ¿Cuándo partís? — Partimos á las ocho de la mañana. 6. La dulce miel agrada mucho á los niñitos (13, *b*). 7. Una negra acción ofende á todo el mundo. 8. V. come poco pan y demasiada carne. 9. Este tendero malo vende malas plumas. 10. (La) Gran (27, *b*) Bretaña es un imperio grande. 11. Ciertos hombres no cumplen con sus promesas ciertas. 12. Un pobre autor que vive en una casa tan grande no es un autor pobre.

13. My aunt and my mother are rich and live in large houses.  
 14. He writes<sup>2</sup> me<sup>1</sup> long letters and notes. 15. No, my dear<sup>3</sup> son<sup>1</sup> and (my) daughter<sup>2</sup> [do] not live here now. 16. The pencils and ink are red. 17. My friends [do] not suffer from the cold. 18. When [do] you start for Burgos? 19. We hope to live in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.

## LECCIÓN SEXTA

38. **Comparison.** The comparative degree of adjectives is expressed by putting *más* (more), *menos* (less), or *tan* (as, so) before the positive, and *que*, *de*, or *de lo que* (than), or *como* (as), *cual* (as) before the second term of the comparison.

Este sombrero es más pequeño que aquél      This hat is smaller than that one

Ese caballo es menos hermoso que el otro      That horse is less handsome than the other one

El árbol es tan alto como la torre      The tree is as tall as the steeple

*a.* In an affirmative sentence containing a numeral, *de* is used instead of *que*, but either *de* or *que* when the sentence is negative: —

Compra más de cien bueyes      He buys more than a hundred oxen

No tiene más que tres duros      He has not more than three dollars

No hay menos de ocho pájaros en el patio      There are not less than eight birds in the yard

*b.* When *than* precedes a sentence and refers back to an adjective, it is rendered by *de lo que*: *es más caritativo de lo que piensan*, *he is more charitable than they think*; but when the reference is to a noun, *than* must be translated by *del que*, *de la que*, *de los que*, or *de las que*, according to the gender and number of said noun: *tiene más dinero del que dice y más deudas de las que confiesa*, *he has more money than he says and more debts than he confesses*.

39. To form the **superlative** degree, the definite article or a possessive adjective is put before the comparative: —

| POSITIVE    | COMPARATIVE   | SUPERLATIVE          | PLURAL               |
|-------------|---------------|----------------------|----------------------|
| rico        | más rico      | el más rico          | los más ricos        |
| rica        | más rica      | la más rica          | las más ricas        |
| <i>rich</i> | <i>richer</i> | <i>(the) richest</i> | <i>(the) richest</i> |

40. The **superlative absolute** is made in one of two ways: —

*a.* First, by an adverb modifying the positive, as *muy hermoso*, *very pretty*; *bien rico*, *very rich*; *sumamente feliz*, *extremely happy*.

*b.* Secondly, by adding to the positive *ísimo* (sometimes *rimo*) after usually dropping the final vowel or diphthong: *querido*, *dear*, *queridísimo*, *very dear*, *dearest*.

41. Six adjectives have an irregular comparison: —

| POSITIVE              | COMPARATIVE | SUPERLATIVE    | SUP. ABSOL.             |
|-----------------------|-------------|----------------|-------------------------|
| bueno, <i>good</i>    | mejor       | el mejor       | } óptimo<br>} bonfísimo |
| malo, <i>bad</i>      | peor        | el peor        |                         |
| grande, <i>great</i>  | mayor       | el mayor       | máximo                  |
| pequeño, <i>small</i> | menor       | el menor       | mínimo                  |
| mucho, <i>much</i>    | más         | los más (de)   | muchfísimo              |
| poco, <i>little</i>   | menos       | los menos (de) | poqufísimo              |

a. The first four of these are sometimes regularly compared: *bueno*, *más bueno*, *el más bueno*, etc. The comparative and superlative of *grande* and *pequeño* are likewise applied to age: *older*, *oldest*; *younger*, *youngest*.

42. Learn the imperfects of the three conjugations, 170, and of *tener*, 164.

43.

acero, *m.* steel  
 aldea, *f.* village  
 año, *m.* year  
 banquero, *m.* banker  
 campo, *m.* country  
 cartera, *f.* pocket-book  
 ciudad, *f.* city  
 como, as  
 de, than  
 dichoso, *-a*, happy  
 diez, ten  
 doce, twelve  
 duro, *-a*, hard  
 enemigo, *m.* enemy  
 hora, *f.* hour  
 iglesia, *f.* church  
 meditar, to meditate  
 melocotón, *m.* peach

menos, less  
 mortal, *m.* mortal  
 nosotros, we, us  
 pensar, to think  
 perder, to lose; *perdió*, (he) lost  
 peseta, *f.* Spanish coin varying in value from fifteen to twenty cents  
 pobre, poor  
 prima, *f.* cousin  
 rigor, *m.* rigor, severity  
 riqufísimo, *-a*, very rich  
 soldado, *m.* soldier  
 tiempo, *m.* time  
 torre, *f.* tower  
 trabajar, to work  
 utilfísimo, *-a*, very useful

44.

### Ejercicio Seis

1. Los melocotones son más dulces que las manzanas. 2. El hierro es menos duro que el acero. 3. ¿Está usted más contento

aquí? 4. Sí, estoy más contento, pero medito más que trabajo. 5. Trabajaba más de diez horas cada día. 6. La torre no era (*was*) tan alta como la iglesia. 7. Yo no tenía más que doce pesetas en mi cartera. 8. Él era más pobre de lo que pensábamos. 9. Tenían más libros de los que compraban. 10. Vivíamos más largo tiempo en el campo que en la ciudad. 11. Los soldados temían más el rigor del invierno que á (13, *b*) sus enemigos. 12. Yo amaba más á mi hermana que á mi prima.

13. The banker is the richest<sup>2</sup> man<sup>1</sup> in (*de*) the village. 14. I am the happiest of (the) mortals. 15. He said (*dijo*) that he [did] not fear the worst results. 16. Dearest Anita, [did] you live many years in Madrid? 17. He was (44, 6) very rich but lost (*perdió*) his money. 18. My good (27) uncle, the 'best of (the) men, used to live with us. 19. He is the oldest of the four brothers and she is the youngest of the sisters. 20. Iron and steel (44, 2) are very useful<sup>2</sup> metals<sup>1</sup>. 21. She was very pretty and extremely happy (40, *a*).

## LECCIÓN SÉPTIMA

**45. Qualifying suffixes.** Spanish is very rich in qualifying suffixes. They are very common in colloquial, familiar language and are joined mostly to nouns and adjectives. It is not easy for a foreigner to use them correctly, and he should avoid them by using separate words. The feminines are formed as in other cases.

### 46. Augmentative endings: —

*ón* and *etón* are simply augmentative: —

hombre, *man*

mujer, *woman*

mozo, *lad*

hombrón, *big man*

mujerona, *big woman*

mocetón, *big fellow*

a. *acho, ucho, ote* indicate ridicule, disdain, depreciation: —

|                       |                                   |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------------|
| pueblo, <i>people</i> | populacho, <i>the rabble</i>      |
| vino, <i>wine</i>     | vinacho, <i>bad wine</i>          |
| animal, <i>animal</i> | animalucho, <i>ugly beast</i>     |
| casa, <i>house</i>    | casucha, <i>shanty, shack</i>     |
| amigo, <i>friend</i>  | amigote, <i>cranky old friend</i> |
| libro, <i>book</i>    | librote, <i>poor old book</i>     |

b. *arrón, ejón, erón, achón, astro* are augmentative, pejorative, depreciative: —

|                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| nube, <i>cloud</i>          | nubarrón, <i>big black cloud</i>             |
| viento, <i>wind</i>         | ventarrón, <i>violent wind storm</i>         |
| calle, <i>street</i>        | callejón, <i>alley, side street</i>          |
| casa, <i>house</i>          | caserón, <i>large, tumble-down house</i>     |
| pueblo, <i>town</i>         | poblachón, <i>large, badly laid-out town</i> |
| político, <i>politician</i> | politicastro, <i>wire-pulling politician</i> |

**47. Diminutives** are more numerous than augmentatives.

a. *ito, cito, ecito* express smallness, affection, commiseration, good-natured irony, etc.: —

|                     |   |
|---------------------|---|
| hijo, <i>son</i>    | hijito, ( <i>dear</i> ) <i>little son</i>         |
| Juan, <i>John</i>   | Juanito, <i>Johnnie</i>                           |
| pobre, <i>poor</i>  | pobrecito, <i>poor fellow</i>                     |
| flor, <i>flower</i> | florecita, ( <i>pretty</i> ) <i>little flower</i> |

b. *ico, cico, ecico* mean about the same as the above (a), but their use is local and dialectic: —

|                     |                              |
|---------------------|------------------------------|
| joven, <i>young</i> | jovencico, <i>youngster</i>  |
| mano, <i>hand</i>   | manecica, <i>little hand</i> |

c. *illo, cillo, ecillo* are diminutive, pejorative, arch, waggish, etc.: —

|                          |   |
|--------------------------|---|
| Luis, <i>Louis</i>       | Luisillo, ( <i>arch</i> ) <i>little Lou</i> |
| viejo, <i>old</i>        | viejecillo, <i>poor old man</i>             |
| loco, <i>vain, silly</i> | loquilla, <i>silly little girl</i>          |
| mujer, <i>woman</i>      | mujercilla, <i>slattern</i>                 |

d. *uelo, zuelo, ezuelo, ichuelo, achuelo* express diminutiveness and likewise lowness, vileness, pettiness, etc.: —



|                         |                                     |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| hijo, <i>son, child</i> | hijuelo, <i>young son, child</i>    |
| rey, <i>king</i>        | reyezuelo, <i>petty king</i>        |
| joven, <i>young</i>     | jovenzuelo, <i>vile youth</i>       |
| puerta, <i>door</i>     | portichuelo, <i>narrow entrance</i> |
| río, <i>river</i>       | riachuelo, <i>rivulet</i>           |

e. Of import similar to the above (*d*) are the endings *ete, cete, ojo, tn, ino*.

48. Learn the imperfects of *ser* and *estar*, 164.

49.

acompañado, *-a, accompanied*  
 bonito, *-a, pretty*  
 conducido, *-a, led*  
 conejuelo, *m. poor little rabbit*  
 contra, *against*  
 derribar, *to knock down*  
 embriagado, *-a, intoxicated*  
 generalmente, *generally*  
 gobierno, *m. government*  
 Juanita, *f. Jennie*  
 jugar, *to play*  
 llegar, *to arrive, succeed; — á*  
     *ser, to become*  
 llevar, *to wear*  
 montecillo, *m. little mound*

ovejita, *f. little sheep*  
 pajarillo, *m. little bird*  
 perrico, *m. little dog*  
 perrito, *m. little dog*  
 piedrecita, *f. small stone*  
 por, *along, by*  
 señora, *f. Mrs., lady*  
 señorita, *f. Miss, young lady*  
 sobre, *on*  
 tirar, *to throw*  
 veneno, *m. bane, poison*  
 venir, *to come*  
 ventanilla, *f. little window*  
 zapatón, *m. big shoe*

50.

### Ejercicio Siete

1. El hombrón y la mujerona tenían un hijuelo quien (*who*) era un mocetón y llevaba zapatones. 2. El populacho embriagado de vinacho tiraba piedrecitas contra la casucha de mi amigote. 3. Un ventarrón acompañado de un nubarrón derribaba los caserones del poblachón. 4. El politicastro es el veneno de todo buen (27) gobierno. 5. Juanita, mi primita (43), estaba en el jardinito jugando con las florecitas. 6. El perrico de Luisillo era un animalucho. 7. Una loquilla llega á ser generalmente una mujercilla. 8. El reyezuelo vivía en un palacio que estaba sobre un riachuelo y tenía portichuelos y



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

|                      |             |                     |               |
|----------------------|-------------|---------------------|---------------|
| Veintiseis,          | 26          | Vigésimo sexto,     | 26th          |
| Veintisiete,         | 27          | Vigésimo séptimo,   | 27th          |
| Veintiocho,          | 28          | Vigésimo octavo,    | 28th          |
| Veintinueve,         | 29          | Vigésimo nono,      | 29th          |
| Treinta,             | 30          | Trigésimo,          | 30th          |
| Treinta y uno,       | 31          | Trigésimo primo,    | 31st          |
| Cuarenta,            | 40          | Cuadragésimo,       | 40th          |
| Cincuenta,           | 50          | Quincuagésimo,      | 50th          |
| Sesenta,             | 60          | Sexagésimo,         | 60th          |
| Setenta,             | 70          | Septuagésimo,       | 70th          |
| Ochenta,             | 80          | Octogésimo,         | 80th          |
| Noventa,             | 90          | Nonagésimo,         | 90th          |
| Ciento,              | 100         | Centésimo,          | 100th         |
| Ciento (y) uno,      | 101         | Centésimo primo,    | 101st         |
| Ciento (y) dos,      | 102         | Centésimo segundo,  | 102d          |
| Doscientos, -as,     | 200         | Ducentésimo,        | 200th         |
| Trescientos, -as,    | 300         | Trecentésimo,       | 300th         |
| Cuatrocientos, -as,  | 400         | Cuadragentésimo,    | 400th         |
| Quinientos, -as,     | 500         | Quingentésimo,      | 500th         |
| Seiscientos, -as,    | 600         | Sexcentésimo,       | 600th         |
| Setecientos, -as,    | 700         | Septengentésimo,    | 700th         |
| Ochocientos, -as,    | 800         | Octogentésimo,      | 800th         |
| Novcientos, -as,     | 900         | Nonagentésimo,      | 900th         |
| Mil,                 | 1000        | Milésimo,           | 1000th        |
| Dos mil,             | 2000        | Dosmilésimo,        | 2000th        |
| Cien mil,            | 100,000     | Cien milésimo,      | 100,000th     |
| Doscientos, -as mil, | 200,000     | Doscientos milésimo | 200,000th     |
| Un millón,           | 1,000,000   | Millonésimo,        | 1,000,000th   |
| Diez millones,       | 10,000,000  | Diez millonésimo,   | 10,000,000th  |
| Cien millones,       | 100,000,000 | Cien millonésimo,   | 100,000,000th |

52. The **cardinals** are treated for the most part as **invariable adjectives**.

a. *Uno, -a*, drops *o* before a noun: *un libro, one book*. When preceded by another number both *o* and *a* are dropped: *veintiún aves, twenty-one birds*; *treinta y un manzanas, thirty-one apples*.

*b.* *Ciento* loses *to* before a noun or adjective: *cien libros, a hundred books*; when multiplied it varies for gender and number: *doscientas pesetas, two hundred pesetas*. Used as a noun it takes the plural form: *unos cientos duros, some hundreds of dollars*; *cientos de soldados, hundreds of soldiers*.

*c.* *Mil* is treated either as an adjective or noun: *dos mil mujeres, two thousand women*; *miles de niños, thousands of children*.

*d.* *Millón* is a noun: *un millón de pájaros, a million birds*; *dos millones de caballos, two million horses*.

*e.* After 1000, numbers are expressed by thousand(s) and hundred(s): *mil ciento y veinte, eleven hundred and twenty*; *dos mil quinientos y treinta, 2530*.

**53.** The **ordinals** are adjectives and vary for gender and number. They may stand before or after the noun: *tomo primero, volume one*; *la décimoquinta fila, the 15th file*. For *primero* and *tercero*, see 27.

*a.* The cardinals are gradually displacing the ordinals, which are rarely used beyond *vigésimo*, and not always up to that point: *página veintiuna, page twenty-one*; *el dos de junio, the second of June*.

*b.* Except *primero*, the cardinals are used for the days of the month: *el primero de julio, the first of July*; *á doce de abril, on the twelfth of April*.

*c.* To distinguish rulers of the same name the ordinals are used up to *décimo* and the cardinals generally thereafter: *Carlos segundo, Pío nono (Pius the Ninth), Luis catorce*.

**54. Fractions.** *Half* is *la mitad* or *un medio*; but *medio* is also an adjective: *dos horas y media, two hours and a half*. From *tercio* to *décimo* the ordinals are used. Thereafter *avo* is generally added to the cardinals: *un onzavo,  $\frac{1}{11}$ , dos quinzavos,  $\frac{2}{15}$ , siete treintavos,  $\frac{7}{30}$* .

**55.** Review the verbs learned heretofore, and learn the first twelve of the cardinals and ordinals.

## 56.

**abril, m.** April  
**al rededor de,** around  
**año, m.** year; — **bisiesto,** leap year  
**celebrar,** to celebrate  
**cita, f.** quotation  
**diciembre, m.** December  
**en,** in  
**enero, m.** January  
**febrero, m.** February  
**Francia, f.** France  
**grande (gran),** great  
**hembra, f.** girl, female  
**hora, f.** o'clock, hour  
**hoy,** to-day  
**independencia, f.** independence  
**julio, m.** July  
**junio, m.** June  
**llamado, -a,** called

**maestro, m.** teacher; — **de música,** music teacher  
**marzo, m.** March  
**mayo, m.** May  
**mes, m.** month  
**minuto, m.** minute  
**nacional,** national  
**noviembre, m.** November  
**otro, -a,** other  
**papa, m.** Pope  
**parte, f.** part  
**Pío, m.** Pius  
**principiar,** to begin  
**recibir,** to receive  
**revolución, f.** revolution  
**semana, f.** week  
**septiembre, m.** September  
**todavía,** yet  
**último, -a,** last  
**varón, m.** boy, male

## 57.

## Ejercicio Ocho

1. Tenemos tres hijos, un varón y dos hembras. 2. Mi hermano perdía cada día ocho pesetas. 3. ¿Qué hora es? No es todavía la una y media. 4. Es hoy el dieciocho de mayo de mil novecientos y ocho. 5. La luna hace su revolución al rededor de la tierra en veintisiete días, siete horas y cuarenta y tres minutos. 6. Hay (*there are*) en el palacio cien soldados y ciento y veinte otros hombres. 7. Luis catorce, llamado *el Grande*, rey de Francia, reinó (*reigned*) setenta y dos años. 8. Pío nono era papa en la segunda mitad del siglo diecinueve. 9. Febrero tiene veintiocho días y veintinueve en los años bisiestos; abril, junio, septiembre y noviembre tienen treinta días, y los otros meses, treinta y uno.

10. The year begins the first of January. 11. We celebrate the fourth of July as the day of our national<sup>2</sup> independence<sup>1</sup>. 12. The week is the fourth part of the month, and the month is the twelfth part of the year. 13. My brother was the

sixth of his class and my sister was the eighth of hers (*la suya*). 14. He receives the fifth, and I the sixth, of what (*lo que*) we make. 15. They lived in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries (34, *d*). 16. My music teacher comes (*viene*) every third (27) day. 17. January is the first, March the third, June the sixth, and December the last month of the year. 18. The quotation is on page twenty-one. 19. Fifty is the half of [one] hundred.

## LECCIÓN NONA

58.

## PRONOUNS

## PERSONAL

| SUBJECT                          | OBJECT OF VERB   | OBJECT OF PREPOSITION      |
|----------------------------------|--|----------------------------|
| SINGULAR                         |  |                            |
| Yo, <i>I</i>                     | me, <i>me, to me</i>                                     | mí, <i>me</i>              |
| Tú, <i>thou</i>                  | te, <i>thee, to thee</i>                                 | tí, <i>thee</i>            |
| Usted, <i>you</i>                | le ( <i>m.</i> ), la ( <i>f.</i> ), <i>you, to you</i>   | usted, <i>you</i>          |
| Él, <i>he, it</i>                | lo, le, <i>him, to him, it</i>                           | él, <i>him, it</i>         |
| Ella, <i>she, it</i>             | la, le, <i>her, to her, it</i>                           | ella, <i>her, it</i>       |
| Ello, <i>it</i>                  | lo, le, <i>it, to it, so</i>                             | ello, <i>it</i>            |
|                                  | se ( <i>reflexive</i> )                                  | sí ( <i>reflexive</i> )    |
| PLURAL                           |  |                            |
| Nosotros, -as, }<br>Nos, }       | nos, <i>us, to us</i>                                    | nosotros, -as, }<br>nos, } |
| Vosotros, -as, }<br>Vos, }       |  |                            |
| Ustedes, <i>you</i>              | les ( <i>m.</i> ), las ( <i>f.</i> ), <i>you, to you</i> | ustedes, <i>you</i>        |
| Ellos ( <i>m.</i> ), <i>they</i> | los, les ( <i>m.</i> ), <i>them, to them</i>             | ellos, <i>them</i>         |
| Ellas ( <i>f.</i> ), <i>they</i> | las, les ( <i>f.</i> ), <i>them, to them</i>             | ellas, <i>them</i>         |
|                                  | se ( <i>reflexive</i> )                                  | sí ( <i>reflexive</i> )    |

NOTE. — *Se* and *sí* mean: *himself, herself, itself, yourself, yourselves, themselves.*

a. *Tú* is used in familiar address, that is, between intimate friends, relatives, to little children, and to domestic animals.

b. *Vos* is always singular but requires its verb to be in the plural. It is less familiar than *tú* and not so formal as *usted*.

c. *Vosotros, -as*, is the plural of *tú* and *vos*.

d. *Usted*, pl. *ustedes* (contracted from *vuestra merced, vuestras mercedes*, your grace, your graces) are the common forms for polite address. Being practically nouns, they take the verbs in the third person. They are abbreviated to *V.* or *Vd.* and *VV.* or *Vds.*

e. *Se, sí* are the reflexives for the third person, singular and plural masculine and feminine, while the first two forms, singular and plural, in the second column are used as reflexives for the first and second persons: —

yo me engaño, *I deceive myself*

tú te engañas, *thou deceivest*, etc.

usted se engaña, *you deceive*, etc.

él se engaña, *he deceives*, etc.

ella se engaña, *she deceives*, etc.

nosotros nos engañamos, *we*, etc.

vosotros os engañáis, *you*, etc.

ustedes se engañan, *you*, etc.

ellos (*m.*) se engañan, *they*, etc.

ellas (*f.*) se engañan, *they*, etc.

f. When a pronoun is the object of a verb, it may be either direct or indirect. Direct: *él me ama*, *he loves me*; indirect: *él me habla*, *he speaks to me*; *él me da una pluma*, *he gives me a pen*; *él me hace un chaleco*, *he is making a vest for me*; *él me quita el sombrero*, *he takes the hat from me*. For clearness or emphasis the prepositional forms may be added: *él me ama á mí*, *él me habla á mí*, etc.

g. *Mismo, -a, -os, -as* (less frequently *propio, -a*), joined to the subject or prepositional forms, expresses *self*: *yo mismo, -a*; *nosotros, -as mismos, -as*; *sí mismo, -a, -os, -as*.

h. The pronouns must be put in the gender and number of the nouns which they represent: *¿Tiene V. mi levita?* — *no, no la tengo*, *have you my coat?* — *no, I haven't it*; *¿Quién compró los cortaplumas?* — *yo los compré*, *who bought the penknives?* — *I bought them*.

i. *Ello, lo*, the neuters, never refer to a definitely specified noun, but to a circumstance, idea, or thought: *Ello es que no la he visto*, *the fact is I have not seen her*; *Dicen que se fué esta mañana*. — *No lo creo*, *they say he went away this morning*. — *I don't believe it*.

j. The prepositions *de* and *á* do not contract in writing with any

of the pronouns. Hence: Hablo de él, de ella, de ello, *I speak of him, of her, of it*; Le pregunto á él, *I ask him*. They are, however, pronounced as one word: dél, della, dello, aél.

*k.* *Migo, tigo, sigo* take the place of *mí, tí, sí*, when *con*, with, is used, and become *conmigo, contigo, consigo* (cf. Latin *mecum, tecum, secum*).

**59. Position of personal pronouns.** When for emphasis or clearness the subject pronouns are expressed, they usually stand **before** the verb in declarative, and **after** it in interrogative, sentences: nosotros amamos á nuestros padres, *we love our parents*; ¿dónde estaba V. cuando yo entré? *where were you when I entered?*

*a.* Objective pronouns follow the verb and are joined to it whenever it is in the affirmative imperative, in the gerund or infinitive, or in the subjunctive used affirmatively as an imperative. They always precede the negative imperative, however: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Cómprame una naranja                        | Buy me an orange                                      |
| Sí, voy á comprarte una                     | Yes, I am going to buy you one                        |
| Quitándole el sombrero lo arrojó<br>al agua | Taking the hat from him he threw<br>it into the water |
| Prestémosle un paraguas                     | Let's lend him an umbrella                            |
| No me hables de eso                         | Don't speak to me of that                             |

Note that, wherever it is necessary to indicate the stressed syllable, the written accent must be used: me compra una naranja, *he buys me an orange*; but: cómprame una naranja, *buy me an orange* (9, a, b, c).

**60.** In other cases than those specified above, the objective pronoun usually stands before the verb, unless the latter begins the sentence: —

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Te hablo francamente                  | I speak to you frankly                            |
| V. me escribe raramente               | You rarely write to me                            |
| No me habla en casa                   | He does not speak to me at home                   |
| But —                                 |   |
| Dejóme en seguida                     | He left me at once                                |
| Hallóme en casa y fuimos al<br>teatro | He found me at home and we<br>went to the theater |



**61.** If the verb is accompanied by more than one objective pronoun, all the above rules apply, and the indirect object precedes the direct, when the latter is in the third person: —

|                          |                                  |
|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Mi cuñado me lo da       | My brother-in-law gives it to me |
| Tu tío te los compra     | Your uncle buys them for you     |
| Pidióselas su madre      | Her mother asked them of her     |
| Díganoslo V. si le gusta | Tell it to us, if you please     |
| Vengo á pedíroslos       | I come to ask them of you        |
| Se las dan á ustedes     | They give them to you            |

Note that the *se* in the above examples is not the reflexive but a euphonic substitute for *le* (*la*) and *les*. Whenever two pronouns beginning with *l* come together, the first is changed to *se*. Hence *le lo*, *les los*, *las lo*, etc., become *se lo*, *se los*, *se lo*, etc.

*a.* When the reflexive *se* occurs with other objective pronouns, it stands first, and the following pronoun will be the indirect object. Such combinations are usually a substitute for the passive voice: —

|                                |                                     |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Nada se me da que quiero       | Nothing is given me which I wish    |
| Se te pide mucho dinero        | Much money is asked of you          |
| Se le dice la verdad           | The truth is told to him            |
| Se nos preguntó si vendría     | We were asked whether he would come |
| Se les ofrece una copa de vino | A glass of wine is offered to them  |

**62.** Learn the preterits of the three regular conjugations, 170.

**63.**

|  |  |
|--|--|
| abrir, to open                           | dulces, <i>m. pl.</i> candy                      |
| ahí, there                               | escape, <i>m.</i> flight; á todo —, at all speed |
| alcanzar, to overtake                    | hallar, to find                                  |
| andar, to go                             | iglesia, <i>f.</i> church                        |
| arma, <i>f.</i> weapon, arm              | pasado, —a, last                                 |
| buscar, to look for                      | porque, because                                  |
| cortesía, <i>f.</i> courtesy             | presente, present; al —, at present              |
| creer, to believe, think                 | puerta, <i>f.</i> door                           |
| ¿cuánto? how much?; ¿— tiempo? how long? | que, that, who                                   |
| dándomelas, giving them to me            |  |



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## LECCIÓN DÉCIMA

65. Possessive adjectives may be designated as *prepositive* and *postpositive*, according as they precede or follow the noun they limit.

| PREPOSITIVE |               |                          | POSTPOSITIVE |               |
|-------------|---------------|--------------------------|--------------|---------------|
| SING.       | PLUR.         |                          | SING.        | PLUR.         |
| mi          | mis           | <i>my</i>                | mío, -a      | míos, -as     |
| tu          | tus           | <i>thy</i>               | tuyo, -a     | tuyos, -as    |
| su          | sus           | { <i>his, her, its</i> } | suyo, -a     | suyos, -as    |
|             |               | { <i>your, one's</i> }   |              |               |
| nuestro, -a | nuestros, -as | <i>our</i>               | nuestro, -a  | nuestros, -as |
| vuestro, -a | vuestros, -as | <i>your</i>              | vuestro, -a  | vuestros, -as |
| su          | sus           | <i>their, your</i>       | suyo, -a     | suyos, -as    |

a. In Spanish the possessive agrees in gender and number with the noun it limits and not, as in English, with the possessor. According, therefore, to its connection in the discourse, *su casa* may mean *his, her, its, one's, your, or their house*. When emphasis or clearness requires it, the corresponding personal pronoun, preceded by *de*, may be used alone or as an addition. Instead, then, of *su casa* (*her house*), we may say: *la casa de ella* or *su casa de ella*.

66. *Own* is expressed by *propio, -a, -os, -as*: —

|                    |                 |
|--------------------|-----------------|
| Mi propio asunto   | My own affair   |
| Tus propios padres | Thy own parents |
| Su propio dinero   | His own money   |

67. The *postpositive* forms are generally used in direct address, when the noun is not modified by an adjective: —

|                               |  |
|-------------------------------|--|
| ¡Hola! amigo mío              | Hello there, my friend                                   |
| Hija mía, te busco desde ayer | My daughter, I have been looking for you since yesterday |

68. If the noun is modified by an adjective, the possessive may precede or follow it: *mi estimado amigo* or *estimado amigo mío*, my esteemed friend.

69. When not in direct address, one of the articles may be placed before the noun and the possessive after it: —

El hermano suyo que murió

The brother of his who died

Un amigo mío llegó hoy

A friend of mine arrived to-day

Note, however, the omission of the article in the following and similar expressions: —

De parte tuya, suya

On thy, his part

Á fe mía, tuya

On my, thy faith

Á casa nuestra

At our house

70. Possession in the case of the bodily belongings is usually expressed by one of the articles and the indirect personal pronouns, or by the article alone when the ownership is apparent: —

Me limpié las uñas

I cleaned my nails

Me cortaron la mano

They cut my hand

La bala le llevó la cabeza

The ball carried off his head

Perdió la vida cruzando el río

He lost his life crossing the river

El desdichado no recobró los sentidos

The unfortunate man did not recover his senses

71. Review all the verbs studied so far.

72.

**accidente**, *m.* accident

**acompañar**, to accompany

**acusar**, to acknowledge

**amiga**, *f.* friend

**anoche**, last evening

**atender á**, to attend to

**bote**, *m.* boat

**brazo**, *m.* arm

**caballero**, *m.* gentleman, sir

**cabeza**, *f.* head

**camino**, *m.* road

**cañonazo**, *m.* cannon ball

**casa**, *f.* house; — **de campo**, country house

**combatiendo**, fighting

**comer**, to eat, dine

**cortar**, to cut  
**costoso**, -a, expensive  
**dedo**, *m.* finger  
**desocupado**, -a, out of a job  
**dicha**, *f.* good luck  
**egoísmo**, *m.* selfishness  
**encontrar**, to find, meet  
**esclavo**, *m.* slave  
**ese, esa, esos, esas**, that, those  
**esposa**, *f.* wife  
**familia**, *f.* family  
**ferrocarril**, *m.* railroad  
**gastar**, to spend  
**honor**, *m.* honor  
**hoy**, to-day  
**leña**, *f.* wood, firewood  
**mientras**, while  
**montaña**, *f.* mountain

**muy**, very, dear  
**naufragio**, *m.* shipwreck  
**París**, Paris  
**pasar**, to pass  
**pasión**, *f.* passion  
**patria**, *f.* (native) country  
**pedazo**, *m.* piece  
**peor**, worst  
**recibo**, *m.* receipt  
**sombrero**, *m.* hat  
**tarde**, *f.* evening; **buenas tardes**,  
 good afternoon  
**vacación**, *f.* vacation  
**vanidad**, *f.* vanity  
**vecino**, *m.* neighbor  
**vestido**, *m.* dress, clothes  
**viento**, *m.* wind

## 73.

## Ejercicio Diez

1. Mi esposa y mis hijos están en París. 2. Tus amigas te aman más de lo que (38, *b*) crees. 3. Cuando V. estaba en España, ¿escribió á menudo á su familia? 4. Por dicha mía vendí mi casa. 5. En un accidente de ferrocarril perdió una mano. 6. ¿No es amigo tuyo ese caballero? 7. Sus vestidos de usted son muy costosos. 8. Perdieron la vida en un naufragio. 9. ¡Buenos días, amigos míos! ¿cómo están VV.? 10. Me corté el dedo cortando un pedazo de leña. 11. Un cañonazo le llevó la cabeza. 12. Muy señor mío: tengo el honor de acusar recibo de su carta, que llegó esta mañana. 13. Amiga mía: tu billete me encontró en nuestra casa de campo. 14. No quiero salvarle la vida.

15. We were passing along the road, when we met our neighbors (13, *b*). 16. The man who attends to his own affairs never is (*está*) out of a job. 17. At our house we dine at six. 18. My wife and I pass our vacation in the mountains. 19. I cut my finger (70) while I was cleaning my nails. 20. The wind carried off his hat. 21. They lost their clothes crossing the river. 22. Good afternoon, sir. [Did] you (*V.*)

find your friends (*f.*) last evening? 23. Man's<sup>2</sup> (13) selfishness<sup>1</sup> is his worst enemy; woman's<sup>2</sup> (13, *a*) vanity<sup>1</sup> is hers (*el suyo*). 24. Fortunately for us (73, 4) we sold our palace to-day. 25. My dear friend (*f.*): will you (*quiere V.*) accompany us (59, *a*) to the theater this evening? 26. [We] are all slaves of our passions. 27. An uncle of theirs lost his arms fighting for (*por*) his country.

## LECCIÓN UNDÉCIMA

74. The postpositive possessive adjectives combined with the definite article form the **possessive pronouns**. They are: —

| MASCULINE                | FEMININE                 | NEUTER  |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|---|
| el mío, los míos         | la mía, las mías         | lo mío, <i>mine</i>                           |
| el tuyo, los tuyos       | la tuya, las tuyas       | lo tuyo, <i>thine</i>                         |
| el suyo, los suyos       | la suya, las suyas       | lo suyo, <i>his, hers, its, yours, theirs</i> |
| el nuestro, los nuestros | la nuestra, las nuestras | lo nuestro, <i>ours</i>                       |
| el vuestro, los vuestros | la vuestra, las vuestras | lo vuestro, <i>yours</i>                      |
| el suyo, los suyos       | la suya, las suyas       | lo suyo, <i>his, hers, yours, theirs</i>      |

*a.* When the prepositions *de* and *á* precede *el*, they contract to *del* and *al*.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Tu lección y la mía son difíciles                | Thy lesson and mine are difficult                    |
| Mi pelo es más negro que el suyo                 | My hair is darker than his                           |
| El carácter de mi padre y del tuyo difiere mucho | The character of my father and of thine differs much |
| Los dará á mi hijo y al tuyo                     | He will give them to my son and to thine             |

75. When clearness requires the meaning of the third personal forms to be more definitely shown, the same means are used as in the case of the possessive adjectives (65, *a*), or *el de*, *los de*, *la de*, *las de* (that, those of) may be employed: —

La pulsera es suya *or* de usted      The bracelet is yours  
 Tengo en la mano mi pañuelo y el      I have in my hand my handker-  
 suyo *or* el de ella                              chief and hers

**76.** When the possessive pronoun stands in a predicate relation the article is omitted, unless there is a contrast: —

El retrato es mío                              The picture is mine  
 Este anillo es el mío y aquél es el      This ring is mine and that is  
 tuyo    thine

**77.** The neuter and the masculine plural are used absolutely as nouns: —

La ley de lo mío y de lo tuyo              The law of mine and thine  
 Los nuestros llegaron al río ayer      Our men arrived at the river  
     yesterday  
 Los suyos                                      His *or* their friends *or* people

**78.** Review all the verbs and learn the futures of the three conjugations, 170. The words for the exercises will now be found in the general vocabularies.

### **79. Ejercicio Once**

1. Ella vivirá en su casa y yo viviré en la mía.    2. Tus manzanas son buenas, pero las mías son mejores.    3. Tú amarás á tus padres como á tí mismo.    4. Los nuestros llegarán hoy por el primer (27) tren.    5. El carácter de mi abuelo y del tuyo tiene cierta semejanza.    6. Yo hablaré á mi vecino y él hablará al suyo.    7. Los suyos atacarán el presidio mañana á las seis (73, 17).    8. Su caballo de él y el de usted estarán aquí antes de una hora.    9. Vuestra abuela y la de ella son muy amables para con nosotros.    10. Quien no quiere (*will*) defender á su perro no defenderá á su mujer.    11. Los manzanos de nuestro huerto llevan más fruta que los de ellos.    12. Prendo lo mío dondequiera lo halle.    13. You will look for my books and yours.    14. Who will

eat with me (58, *k*) and mine (77)? 15. Will she live with her friends or with yours (74, *a*)? 16. My cravat is blue; yours is black. 17. The possessive<sup>2</sup> pronouns<sup>1</sup> of the third person have different meanings according to their (*su*) connection in the discourse. 18. The character of your teacher and of ours differs but little (74, *a*). 19. I shall speak to your governess and to theirs (74, *a*). 20. The pen is mine; the knife is yours (76). 21. This inkstand is mine; that is thine (76). 22. They will not fear your wrath more than mine. 23. She plays the piano better than you, because her fingers are longer (38) than yours.

## LECCIÓN DUODÉCIMA

80. **Demonstratives** may be distinguished as first, second, or third personal, according as they indicate nearness to the speaker, or the person addressed, or distance from both. The adjectives, which usually precede the noun, are as follows: —

|                      | MAS.       | FEM.     | NEUT.     |                 |                     |
|----------------------|------------|----------|-----------|-----------------|---------------------|
| <i>First person</i>  | { este     | esta     | esto      | <i>this</i>     | } near me, us       |
|                      | { estos    | estas    | (wanting) | <i>these</i>    |                     |
| <i>Second person</i> | { ese      | esa      | eso       | <i>that</i>     | } near you          |
|                      | { esos     | esas     | —         | <i>those</i>    |                     |
| <i>Third person</i>  | { aquel    | aquella  | aquello   | <i>that</i>     | } distant from both |
|                      | { aquellos | aquellas | —         | <i>those</i>    |                     |
| <i>Pro-nouns</i>     | { el       | la       | lo        | <i>he, she,</i> | } the one that      |
|                      | { los      | las      | —         | <i>they,</i>    |                     |

*a.* *De* and *á* contract with *el* to *del* and *al*.

*b.* To secure emphasis the article is put before the noun and the demonstrative after: *la ventana esta, this window (here)*.

*c.* *Ese* may be used to express contempt: *¡ese tipo un rival mío! that fellow a rival of mine!*

*d.* When used of time, *este*, *ese*, and *aquel* refer respectively to the *present*, *the near past*, and *the remote past*: —



|   |  |
|---|--|
| En estos días de Dios                         | In these blessed days                    |
| Siempre me acordaré de ese no-<br>viembre     | I shall always remember that<br>November |
| Aquellos dichosos años de nuestra<br>juventud | Those happy years of our youth           |

81. The pronominal forms differ from the adjectives in having in the masculine and feminine the written accent: *éste, éstos, ésta, éstas, aquél, aquéllos, aquélla, aquéllas*. They are usually rendered into English by: *this (one), that (one), the or that (one) yonder*; in the plural: *these, those*: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Esta casa es la mía, ésa es de<br>usted, y aquélla es de mi padre<br>político | This house is mine, that one is<br>yours, and the one yonder is<br>my father-in-law's |
|---|---|

82. *Éste* may sometimes mean the latter, and *aquél*, the former: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Juan y Enrique son amigos; éste<br>vive en Barcelona y aquél en<br>Oviedo | John and Henry are friends; the<br>latter lives in Barcelona, the<br>former in Oviedo |
|---|---|

83. In correspondence *ésta* means the city where the writer is and *ésa* that of his correspondent: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Parto de ésta mañana por la ma-<br>ñana y llegaré á ésa al ponerse<br>el sol | I leave this place to-morrow<br>morning and shall arrive in<br>your city at sunset |
|--|--|

84. The neuter forms *esto, eso, aquello* are used only as pronouns to represent an idea, circumstance, or thing not specifically named: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Esto es vidrio, eso es madera, pero<br>aquello es piedra | This is glass, that (near you) is<br>wood, but that (over there) is<br>stone |
|--|--|



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

days of our youth (80, *d*) we spent (them) in the south of Spain (87, 5). 19. In those times (the) men lived (*imp.*) in caves and ate acorns. 20. That (80, *c*) man never will be worthy of the admiration of his fellows. 21. This soldier is my cousin, that one [near you] is my nephew, and the one [yonder] is my brother-in-law (87, 11). 22. Bretón wrote many dramas, Juan Valera, many books; the former died (*murió*) in eighteen hundred and seventy-three (52, *e*), the latter in 1905. 23. I shall leave this place (83) to-day and shall be (use *estar*) in your city to-morrow. 24. We use *esto*, *eso*, and *aquello* to (*para*) represent an idea, circumstance, or something indefinite. 25. According to the Bible, he who does not enter by the door of the sheepfold is [a] thief and a robber. 26. Those (85) of the other side will eat in the hall. 27. That affair of this morning will cause [a] great stir.

## LECCIÓN DÉCIMOTERCIA

### RELATIVE PRONOUNS

88. Relative pronouns are so called, because they *relate* to nouns already mentioned or implied, which are termed their *antecedents*.

|   |   |  |
|---|---|--|
| que,  | } | <i>who, which, that</i>                |
| quien, quienes,                                     |   |  |
| el cual, los cuales, <i>f.</i> la cual, las cuales, | } | <i>who, which</i>                      |
| el que, los que, <i>f.</i> la que, las que,         |   |  |
| cuyo, cuyos, <i>f.</i> cuya, cuyas,                 |   | <i>which, of which, whose</i>          |
| tal . . . cual,                                     |   | <i>such . . . as</i>                   |
| tanto . . . cuanto,                                 |   | <i>as much, so much, many . . . as</i> |
| lo cual,  |   | <i>which; lo que, that which, what</i> |

NOTE. — *De* and *á* contract with *el* to *del* and *al*.

**89.** *Que*, the most common of the relatives, is used for both persons and things and for all genders and numbers. It is not, however, used of persons when the relative is governed by a preposition: —

|                                       |                                     |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| El conejo <i>que</i> corre            | The rabbit which runs               |
| La mujer <i>que</i> está aquí         | The woman who is here               |
| Las cosas <i>que</i> me interesan     | The things which interest me        |
| La escuela á <i>que</i> van los niños | The school to which the children go |

NOTE. — The relative may not be omitted in Spanish as in English: *el libro de que hablo*, *the book I speak of*.

**90.** *Quien*, pl. *quienes*, may be used,

1st. As a nominative, when its clause may be made independent and connected with the principal clause by *and*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Vino á mi casa un hombre <i>quien</i> me lo dijo | There came to my house a man who told it to me    |
| Vino á mi casa un hombre y me lo dijo            | There came to my house a man and he told it to me |

2d. As the object of a preposition when the relative refers to a person: —

|                                  |                            |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| La persona de <i>quien</i> hablo | The person of whom I speak |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|

3d. In a compound sense to embrace both antecedent and relative: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <i>Quien</i> se bate y huye vivirá para batirse otra vez | He who fights and runs away will live to fight again |
|--|--|

4th. In a partitive sense, meaning *some*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Se escondieron <i>quienes</i> bajo la mesa, <i>quienes</i> detrás de la puerta | They hid themselves, some under the table, some behind the door |
|--|---|

**91.** *El que* and *el cual* are used both of persons and things to avoid ambiguity when the relative is separated from its antecedent: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Mi tía dió dos tertulias en su quinta, á las que me convidó | My aunt gave at her country seat two parties to which she invited me |
| La pluma de mi sobrino, la cual está en el pupitre          | My nephew's pen which is on the desk                                 |

92. *Cuyo, -a, -os, -as*, agrees in gender and number with the nouns by which it is limited: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| El guerrero cuya vida fué sacrificada              | The warrior whose life was sacrificed         |
| Los romanos cuyos estadistas eran grandes oradores | The Romans whose statesmen were great orators |

93. *Tal . . . cual* and *tanto . . . cuanto* are used as cor-relatives: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Tal es su conducta cual era de esperar  | His conduct is such as was to be expected      |
| Tendrá V. tantos honores cuantos quiera | You will have as many honors as you may desire |

NOTE. — *Tanto* may be omitted and *cuanto*, or *todo cuanto*, include both antecedent and relative: —

|                                |                                     |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Tiene cuantos discípulos desea | He has as many pupils as he desires |
| Todo cuanto posee no bastará   | All that he owns will not suffice   |

94. *Lo cual* and *lo que* relate to a previous assertion or situation: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Se suicidó, lo cual causó mucha sorpresa    | He committed suicide, which caused much surprise |
| El navío hace agua, lo que es muy peligroso | The ship leaks, which is very dangerous          |

95. *Donde* may take the place of a relative governed by a preposition: —

- El pueblo **donde** (=en que) nació    The village where (in which) he  
was born
- El teatro **á donde** (=á que) vamos    The theater to which we go

96. Learn the present indicative of *haber*, 164, and the past participles of the three regular conjugations, 170.

### 97.                    Ejercicio Trece

1. El conejo que ha escapado del galgo corre por el campo.
2. Las perdices que estaban cerca del río han volado al bosque.
3. La hiena y el lobo, que son animales salvajes, han muerto á las ovejas.
4. Los bueyes que hemos encontrado en el camino han escapado del vaquero.
5. He encontrado á un hombre, quien me lo ha dicho.
6. El señor de quien usted ha hablado pertenece á la *Real Academia Española*.
7. No faltan quienes (90, 3d) han afirmado lo contrario.
8. De repente se han escondido, quienes (90, 4th) en el jardín, quienes detrás del granero.
9. El barco, que ha salido del puerto y del que depende el éxito de la empresa, ha varado.
10. Mi tía ha dado dos tertulias en su quinta, á las cuales me ha convidado (91).
11. Los griegos, cuyas arquitectura y escultura han quedado hasta nuestros días sin rivales, son meras sombras de sus antepasados.
12. ¿Has vivido tantos años cuantos deseas?

13. The mare, which is neighing, has lost her colt.
14. The church, to which he belongs, is (18, b) on the corner.
15. The windows, which have been (*sido*) made, are very-small.
16. The cities which we have visited are on the continent.
17. We have met two scholars who have lost their (*el*) way.
18. The lady of whom they have spoken has frequented the best (*alta*) society.
19. He who is (*está*) content with little has attained to the true philosophy of (the) life.
20. They have all<sup>2</sup> died<sup>1</sup>, some from (the) old-age, some from various diseases.
21. They have given an exhibition of paintings, which has pleased everybody.
22. The dog whose instinct is surer than (the) reason is (the)

man's (13) best friend. 23. Our heroes, whose feats have astonished everybody, now rest in peace. 24. His life is such as (93) it was formerly. 25. He will pay as many debts as he can (*pueda*). 26. You (*usted*) shall have as much money as you desire (93, NOTE). 27. All that we have will be (*será*) lost. 28. He is drunk<sup>2</sup> all-the-time<sup>1</sup>, which is very disgusting. 29. The church to which we go is in (the) Second<sup>2</sup> Street<sup>1</sup> (95).

## LECCIÓN DÉCIMOCUARTA

### 98. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

quién, quiénes, *who?* qué, *what? what (a)!*

cuyo, cuyos, *f. cuya, cuyas,* } *whose?*  
de quién, *pl. de quiénes,*

cuál, *pl. cuáles, which? what?*

qué tal, qué tales, *what kind of? how?*

cuánto, *pl. cuántos, how much? how many?*

qué tanto, *how, how much?*

Note the use of the written accent to distinguish the interrogatives from the relatives.

### 99. *Quién* is used only of persons: —

¿Quién se lo ha dicho á usted?

Who told it to you?

¿Quiénes son aquellos forasteros?

Who are those strangers?

¿Sabe V. con quién vino?

Do you know with whom he came?

100. *Qué* is both pronoun and adjective and is invariable for gender and number: —

¿Qué come usted?

What are you eating?

¿Qué libros compró él?

What books did he buy?

¿Qué pluma quiere ella?

What pen does she wish?

*a.* In exclamatory sentences *qué* means *how, what, what a*. When the noun is followed by an adjective, the latter may be rendered more emphatic by *tan* or *más*: —

|                          |                                 |
|--------------------------|---------------------------------|
| ¡Qué feliz soy yo!       | How happy I am!                 |
| ¡Qué buen tiempo hoy!    | What fine weather to-day!       |
| ¡Qué casa más bonita!    | What a most beautiful house!    |
| ¡Qué asunto tan molesto! | What a very troublesome affair! |

101. *Cúyo*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, is rarely used as an interrogative, *de quién* being preferred: —

|                            |                              |
|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| ¿De quién es esta pluma?   | } Whose pen is this?         |
| ¿Cúya es esta pluma?       |                              |
| ¿Cúya pluma es ésta?       |                              |
| ¿De cúyos poemas habla V.? | Of whose poems do you speak? |

102. *Cuál*, pl. *cuáles*, is used both adjectively and pronominally. As a pronoun it is followed either by *de* or some part of *ser* (*to be*): —

|                                 |                                      |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| ¿Á cuál de los dos prefiere V.? | Which of the two do you prefer?      |
| ¿Cuál es la hora de la siesta?  | What is the hour of the midday nap?  |
| ¿Cuál poesía prefiere V.?       | Whose poetry do you prefer?          |
| ¿Qué poesía prefiere V.?        | What (kind of) poetry do you prefer? |
| ¿Cuál es la gramática?          | Which is the grammar?                |
| ¿Qué es gramática?              | What is grammar?                     |

103. *Qué tal* is used as a pronoun, adjective, or adverb: —

|                              |                                |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| ¿Qué tal tiempo hace?        | What kind of weather is it?    |
| ¿Qué tales son las muestras? | What kind of samples are they? |
| ¿Qué tal sigue usted?        | How are you (getting along)?   |

104. *Cuánto*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, is used adjectively or pronominally: —



|                                 |                                     |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| ¿Cuánto dinero perdió V.?       | How much money did you lose?        |
| ¿Cuántos caballos compró él?    | How many horses did he buy?         |
| ¿Cuánto costó á V. esa máquina? | How much did that machine cost you? |

a. As an adverb *cuánto* is abbreviated to *cuán*: —

|                               |                       |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------|
| ¡Cuán dichosa es ella!        | How happy she is!     |
| ¡Cuán airadamente se condujo! | How angrily he acted! |

105. *Qué tanto*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, is similar in all its uses to *cuánto* and loses its final *-to* as an adverb: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| ¿Qué tanto se diferencia?                 | How much does it differ?                    |
| ¿Qué tantas deudas tiene él?              | How many debts has he?                      |
| Usted ignora que tan airosa es la anciana | You don't know how graceful the old lady is |

106. Learn the imperfect of *haber*, 164, and the perfect and pluperfect of the three regular conjugations; 170.

### 107. Ejercicio Catorce

1. ¿Quién ha venido por el tren de recreo? 2. ¿Quiénes eran aquellos caballeros? 3. ¿Quién es la mujer que había desaparecido? 4. Ya había dicho yo quién me atacó. 5. ¿Qué desea usted? — Nada deseo. 6. ¿Qué artistas han trabajado en la ópera? 7. ¿Qué retrato había tomado el ladrón? 8. ¡Qué felices habíamos sido antes de la guerra! 9. ¡Qué buen tiempo hemos tenido esta primavera! 10. ¡Qué niñita tan bonita es la Juanita! 11. ¿De quién es esta habitación? — Es de mi tío. 12. ¿De cuyos poemas había hablado V.? — Yo había hablado de los de Cadalso. 13. ¿Á cuál de los varios pretendientes habían preferido VV.? 14. ¿Cuál es la verdadera religión? 15. ¿Qué es la religión cristiana? 16. ¿Qué tal tiempo habíamos tenido antes de ayer? 17. ¿Cuántos obreros han trabajado en la muralla? 18. ¡Cuán felizmente habían vivido en aquellos días! 19. ¡Qué tan deliciosa es la música italiana!



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



|                             |                             |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Alguien llama; ¿quién es?   | Someone knocks; who is it?  |
| Es alguien que pide limosna | It is someone who asks alms |

**110.** *Algo* and *cosa* (= *alguna cosa*, something). *Algo* is used also adverbially, and *cosa de* in the sense of *something like, about*. Qualified by an adjective *algo* may be joined to it by *de*: —

|                              |                                   |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| ¿Sabe V. algo (de) nuevo?    | Do you know anything new?         |
| Eso es cosa muy distinta     | That is something very different  |
| Él es algo indispuerto       | He is somewhat indisposed.        |
| Costará cosa de veinte duros | It will cost about twenty dollars |

**111.** *Cada uno, -a*, and *cada cual* have no plural: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Cada uno tiene sus quehaceres                   | Every one has his own affairs                   |
| Cada una de las actrices cumple con sus deberes | Each one of the actresses discharges her duties |
| Cada cual es digno de su salario                | Each one is worthy of his hire                  |

**112.** *Nada* (= *ninguna cosa*, nothing), when it precedes the verb or stands alone, means *nothing, not anything*; when the verb is negative it is translated by *anything*. It may be joined to an adjective by *de*: —

|                                     |                               |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Nada tengo <i>or</i> no tengo nada  | I have not anything           |
| Mi vida no tiene nada de invidiable | My life has nothing enviable  |
| ¿Qué ha vendido usted? — Nada       | What have you sold? — Nothing |

*a.* Negative pronouns (*nada, nadie*, etc.) in a positive sense occur in sentences where the negative is merely implied; especially after *sin (que)*, *antes (que)*, after comparatives, after certain verbs, as *negar* (to deny), *rehusar* (to refuse), and when a negative answer is expected: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Sin responder nada                     | Without answering anything                     |
| Antes que hubo oído nada               | Before he had heard anything                   |
| Es más agradable que nada que he visto | It is more agreeable than anything I have seen |

|                                     |                                       |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Negarle nada sería inútil           | To deny him anything would be useless |
| ¿Quién podría creer nada tan necio? | Who could believe anything so silly?  |

113. *Fulano (de tal)*, *zutano*, and *mengano* indicate persons either unknown or whom we do not care to mention. They generally occur in the order given: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Fulano (de tal) me lo ha dicho                           | So-and-so told me so   |
| Don Fulano se casó ayer con la señorita Zutana           | Mr. So-and-so married Miss So-and-so yesterday'              |
| Yo no creo todo lo que me dicen Fulano, Zutano y Mengano | I don't believe everything that Tom, Dick, and Harry tell me |

114. *Nadie* is applied only to persons. In its syntax it is similar to *nada* (112 and 112, a). Like its opposite, *alguien*, it can not be limited by *de* and a following noun:—

|                                    |                                |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Nadie lo sabe mejor que él         | No one knows it better than he |
| No he encontrado á nadie           | I have not met anyone          |
| ¿Quien ha ayudado á usted? — Nadie | Who has helped you? — No one   |

a. See 112, a, for analogous constructions with *nada*: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Se fué antes de hablar á nadie                  | He went away before speaking to anyone         |
| Lo tomó sin pedirlo á nadie                     | He took it without asking it of anyone         |
| Vende sus géneros á precios más bajos que nadie | He sells his goods at lower prices than anyone |
| ¿Yo rehusar nada á nadie?                       | I refuse anybody anything?                     |

115. *Quienquiera*, pl. *quienesquiera*, applies to persons only and is rarely used in the plural: —

|                                  |                             |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Quienquiera lo diga, se equivoca | Whoever says so is mistaken |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|

116. *Uno*, *-a*, is not so much used as Germ. *man*, French *on*, other expressions taking its place: —

Cuando uno no tiene dinero no puede gastarlo      When one hasn't money one can not spend it  
 Si una se acalora pierde la cabeza      If one gets hot one loses her head

**117.** *Le, lo, la, los, las* are used as objective pronouns in a partitive sense, *some, any*: *¿Hay tinta en el tintero? — Sí, la hay.* Is there any ink in the inkstand? — Yes, there is some.

**118.** Review all the tenses of the three regular conjugations and learn the conditionals of the same, 170.

**119.**

### Ejercicio Quince

1. Alguien toca á la puerta. — ¿Quién es? 2. ¿Desea usted algo bueno? 3. Me ha contado algo de nuevo. — Mi madre está algo indispuesta. 4. Dijo (*he said*) que le había costado cosa de quinientos duros. 5. Cada uno había cumplido con sus deberes. 6. Cada cual había sido (*been*) digno de su salario. 7. Nada había comprado yo. 8. Hoy no hemos vendido nada. 9. No hay nada de extraño en eso. 10. ¿Qué le ha prometido á usted? — Nada. 11. Ha partido sin darme nada. 12. Este pañuelo es más costoso que nada que compramos. 13. ¿Es posible negarle nada á él (58, *f*)? 14. ¿Cree usted nada tan ridículo? 15. Me reveló su amor diciéndome que nadie la amaría más que él. 16. ¿Quién temería á aquel bobo? — Nadie. 17. Se sentó antes de hablar á nadie. 18. Es más generoso que nadie. 19. Ellos no rehusarían nada á nadie. 20. Cuando uno está contento aquí, ¿porqué cambiar de residencia? 21. Si ustedes desean naranjas, las encontrarán sobre la mesa de la cocina.

22. Someone arrived before ten o'clock. 23. Something bad has happened. 24. He delivered a speech somewhat comical. 25. He will pay something like fifty dollars for the cow. 26. Every one prefers his own country. 27. I don't believe anything of the kind. 28. What have you found in the

trunk? — Nothing. 29. He left me without denying anything. 30. It is better than anything we have seen (112, a). 31. Would you believe anything so scandalous? 32. So-and-so had met him in the street near the post office. 33. No one will pass without speaking to the doorkeeper. 34. Who had helped him? — No one. 35. He says (*dice*) that he will sell his goods at lower prices than anyone (112, a). 36. One often<sup>2</sup> needs<sup>1</sup> much patience in this life. 37. Have you [any] milk and cream? — Yes, we have some. 38. Where are the peaches? — You will find some in the dining room.

## LECCIÓN DÉCIMOSEXTA

## INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES

120. The indefinite adjectives differ syntactically from the pronouns in that, while some of them may be used as pronouns, they also exercise all the functions of true adjectives, agreeing in gender and number with the nouns they limit.

ajeno, *another's, other people's*

alguno, *some, someone, a few*

ambos, *-as, both*

cada, *each, every*

cierto, *a certain, certain*

cualquiera, *whichever, whatever*

cuanto, *as much, as many*

mismo, *same, self, very*

mucho, *much, many*

ninguno, *none, no, no one*

otro, *other, another*

poco, *little, few*

sendos, *-as, one each, as many*

tal, *such, such a*

tamaño, *as much, great*

todo, *all, every, any*

uno y otro, *both*

único, *solo, only, alone*

121. *Ajeno, -a*, is an adjective meaning *what belongs to another, foreign to* (*to = de or á*): —

No codiciarás los bienes ajenos

Thou shalt not covet other  
people's goods

Ajeno al asunto

Foreign to the subject

**122.** *Alguno, -a*, is used both as pronoun and adjective. As an adjective it may be replaced in the plural by *unos*, or *unos cuantos*: —

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| ¿Ha venido alguno?                               | Has anyone come?                      |
| ¿Tiene V. algunos lápices? — Sí,<br>unos cuantos | Have you any pencils? — Yes,<br>a few |

**123.** *Ambos, -as*, is both pronoun and adjective: —

|                              |                                       |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Apoyó ambos codos en la mesa | He rested both elbows on the<br>table |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|

**124.** *Cada*, an adjective of one termination, can be used in the plural only before numbers: —

|                                 |  |
|---------------------------------|--|
| Cada día me levanto á las siete | Every day I rise at seven o'clock                      |
| Cada oveja con su pareja        | Every Jack has his Gill (Every<br>sheep with its like) |
| Cada seis meses                 | Every six months                                       |

**125.** *Cierto, -a, -os, -as*, always stands before the noun in the sense of *certain*; after the noun it means *sure, reliable*: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Cierto amigo mío viene á verme<br>ciertos días de cada semana | A certain friend of mine comes to<br>see me certain days each week |
|---|--|

**126.** *Cualquiera*, pl. *cualesquiera*, drops its final *a*, when it precedes immediately a noun. In the singular the full form may stand after the noun: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Cualquier comida es mejor que<br>ninguna | Any dinner whatsoever is better<br>than none |
| Un libro cualquiera me bastará           | Any book soever will suffice me              |

**127.** *Cuanto, -a, -os, -as*. For example see 93 and 93, NOTE.

**128.** *Mismo, -a, -os, -as*, has a superlative *mismísimo*, the very same. Translate *mismo* by *similar*, when the indefinite article precedes it: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Las mismas causas producen los mismos resultados | The same causes produce the same results |
| Cometió otra vez el mismísimo crimen             | He committed again the very same crime   |
| Los dos tienen un mismo deber                    | The two have a similar duty              |

NOTE. — For *mismo* meaning *self* see examples under 58, g.

129. *Mucho*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, has a superlative *muchísimo*, very much, very many, used instead of *muy mucho* which is rare: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Mucho ruido y pocas nueces                  | Much ado about nothing                              |
| Me relató muchísimos ejemplos de su caridad | He related to me very many instances of her charity |

130. *Ninguno*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, is treated syntactically like *nada* and *nadie*. See 112, 112, *a*, and 114, 114, *a*: —

|                                   |                               |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| No entiende ninguna palabra       | He does not understand a word |
| Ningunos de mis amigos han venido | None of my friends have come  |
| Es mejor que ningún libro (27)    | It is better than no book     |

131. *Otro*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, other, another, is never preceded by the indefinite article: —

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| Comió dos naranjas y se le dió otra | He ate two oranges and another was given him |
| Otros tiempos, otras costumbres     | Other times, other manners                   |

132. *Poco*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as*, has a superlative *poquísimo*, very little, very few, but may be modified by *muy*, very: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Muchos son llamados mas pocos escogidos | Many are called, but few are chosen      |
| Las poquísimas veces que le he visto    | The very few times I have seen him       |
| Canta un poco; canta poco               | She sings a little; she sings but little |



133. *Sendos, -as*, is used only in the plural: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Entraron cinco jóvenes llevando<br>del brazo á sendas jóvenes | There came in five young men<br>each having on his arm a young<br>lady |
|---|--|

134. *Tal*, pl. *tales*, such a, such: —

|                       |   |
|-----------------------|---|
| Tal cosa es increíble | Such a thing is incredible              |
| Tal me parece difícil | Such a thing seems to me diffi-<br>cult |

NOTE. — *Tal* sometimes conveys the idea of 'satire or contempt: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Repuso ella furiosa que no era tal<br>mujer | Furious she replied that she was<br>not that kind of a woman |
|---|--|

a. *Tal*, preceded by the definite article, means *the said, in ques-  
tion*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Y el tal Sancho quería ser gober-<br>nador de una isla | And the said Sancho wished to<br>be governor of an island |
|--|---|

b. Preceded by the indefinite article *tal* means *one, a certain*: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Se prendió fuego á la casa de un<br>tal Martín | Fire broke out in the house of<br>one Martin |
|--|--|

135. *Todo, -a, -os, -as*, syntactically is treated in two ways: —

1st. It stands alone whenever it expresses a general or indefinite concept: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Todo buen ciudadano lo siente                | Every good citizen regrets it            |
| Géneros de todas clases y á todos<br>precios | Goods of every kind and at all<br>prices |

2d. *Todo* is followed by a word limiting its application to a special concept: —

|                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| Quedé en Europa todo el año | I remained in Europe the whole<br>year |
| Pasó conmigo toda la semana | He spent with me the whole week        |
| Hé aquí todos mis libros    | Here are all my books                  |



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

sobre los muchos. 13. Aun cuando un hombre no es esclavo de ningún otro es esclavo de sí mismo. 14. Arribaron al puerto sin ningún (27) accidente. 15. Tenga V. la bondad de darme otra taza de te. — Lo poco que recibo me satisface. 16. Esos pocos ejemplos no prueban la regla. 17. Tal cosa nunca me ocurrió. 18. Sólo sabía de la tal carta por los periódicos. 19. Creo que tamaña resultaría la empresa. 20. En todo caso es muy improbable. 21. Todos piensan (pensar) como yo. 22. Mi maestro de música me da una lección todos los viernes. 23. Todo lo que he dicho es verdad. 24. Vivir honrado y morir lamentado, éstos son sus únicos deseos.

25. I am (18, *b*) here for reasons foreign to my wish. 26. Some officers of the American (31, *b*) ship have arrived at the city. 27. The two (139, 4) pulled her out of the water (12, NOTE). 28. Every twenty-eight (51) days the moon makes a revolution on its axis. 29. Certain stones, as the diamond and the ruby, are called precious stones (139, 7). 30. Any honest<sup>2</sup> man<sup>1</sup> would reject that (*esa*) proposition. 31. He spends as many dollars as he makes (93, NOTE). 32. The same ideas prevail with reference to our (65) manners. 33. We two have a similar disposition. 34. Many times we forget that we are mortal. 35. There-are (*hay*) very many delicious<sup>2</sup> fruits<sup>1</sup> in the tropical<sup>2</sup> parts<sup>1</sup> of the earth. 36. We shall not find any of the pupils in the classroom. 37. Another time we shall try to accomplish better (41) results. 38. I see very little difference between the two (51) propositions. 39. Very (*muy*) few persons have attended the recital. 40. Such customs exist only in the modern<sup>2</sup> world<sup>1</sup>. 41. Furious he replied that he was not that kind of a man. 42. Intrigues of every kind obstruct the passage of the bill. 43. I have spent all my (65) money. 44. Every Monday I receive (13, *b*) my friends at my office. 45. I work the whole day (135, NOTE) and a part of the evening. 46. [It] is the only one of its kind. 47. Only a fool would believe such a thing.

117  
LECCIÓN DÉCIMOSÉPTIMA

## ADVERBS

140. Adverbs may be classified as *simple* or *primitive*, *derivative*, and *compound*.

141. Adverbs of the first class are expressed by a single word: *bien*, *well*; *mal*, *badly*; *temprano*, *early*; *sólo*, *only*.

142. Derivative adverbs are formed by *-mente* (corresponding to English *-ly*) and the feminine of adjectives, the latter always retaining their own accent: —

*útilmente*, *usefully*; *afortunadamente*, *fortunately*

a. When two or more derivative adverbs follow each other immediately, *-mente* is used with the last adjective only: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Juan Valera escribe clara, concisa<br>y elegantemente | Juan Valera writes clearly, concisely,<br>and elegantly |
|---|---|

b. In many cases *de una manera* or *de un modo* is used instead of *-mente*: —

|                           |                                  |
|---------------------------|----------------------------------|
| De una manera encantadora | Charmingly, in a charming manner |
| De un modo holgazán       | Idly, in an idle way             |

143. *Compound* adverbs are simply adverbial phrases composed of two or more words. Some now appear as single words, but their composition is evident: —

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| acaso (á + caso), <i>perhaps</i>      | aprisa (á + prisa), <i>quickly</i>     |
| ahora (á + hora), <i>now</i>          | despacio (de + espacio), <i>slowly</i> |
| apenas (á + penas), <i>scarcely</i>   | anteayer (ante + ayer), <i>the day</i> |
| anoche (á + noche), <i>last night</i> | <i>before yesterday</i>                |

a. But most adverbial phrases are written in separate words: —

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| á la moda, <i>in style, stylishly</i>  | á más andar, <i>at full speed</i> |
| á la española, <i>in Spanish style</i> | puertas afuera, <i>outdoors</i>   |
| por consiguiente, <i>consequently</i>  | tierra adentro, <i>inland</i>     |

río arriba, *upstream*  
 en lo sucesivo, *in the future*  
 de buena gana, *willingly*  
 á sabiendas, *knowingly*

á más tardar, *at latest*  
 siglos atrás, *centuries ago*  
 años después, *years afterwards*  
 meses antes, *months before*

144. Note also the following: —

donde, *where*  
 ¿dónde? *where?*  
 cuando, *when*  
 ¿cuándo? *when?*  
 como, *about, as*  
 ¿cómo? *how?*

aquí, *here (near me)*  
 acá, *here (towards me)*  
 ahí, *there (near or towards you)*  
 allí, *there (distant from both)*  
 allá, *there (in that direction)*  
 de allí, *thence, from there*

(Creo) que sí, que no (I think) so, (I think) not

a. *Donde* is often used as a relative or interrogative pronoun referring to things or places, and hence may be governed by a preposition: —

La ciudad (en) donde vive  
 El lugar de donde viene  
 El camino por donde venimos  
 ¿Á dónde va?

The city in which he lives  
 The place from which he comes  
 The road by which we came  
 Where is he going?

145. **Comparison.** Adverbs are compared like adjectives, the neuter *lo* taking, in the superlative, the place of the gender forms of the article used with adjectives.

| POSITIVE                 | COMPARATIVE               | SUPERLATIVE                   |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| lejos, <i>far</i>        | más lejos, <i>farther</i> | lo más lejos, <i>farthest</i> |
| á menudo, <i>often</i>   | más á menudo              | lo más á menudo               |
| ricamente, <i>richly</i> | más ricamente             | lo más ricamente              |

a. Irregular comparisons: —

| POSITIVE                      | COMPARATIVE          | SUPERLATIVE                  |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|------------------------------|
| bien, <i>well</i>             | mejor, <i>better</i> | lo mejor, <i>(the) best</i>  |
| mal, <i>badly</i>             | peor, <i>worse</i>   | lo peor, <i>(the) worst</i>  |
| mucho, muy, <i>much, very</i> | más, <i>more</i>     | lo más, <i>(the) most</i>    |
| poco, <i>little</i>           | menos, <i>less</i>   | lo menos, <i>(the) least</i> |

NOTE. — *Mucho* or *muchísimo* takes the place of *muy*, when the latter would stand alone: —

¿Es interesante la comedia? — Sí, Is the comedy interesting? — Yes,  
mucho, muchísimo very (much)

146. *Than* is expressed by *que* and *de*, the latter being used before numbers in positive sentences: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ahora toca menos á menudo que<br>antes | He plays less often now than<br>formerly |
| No vino más que dos veces              | He did not come more than twice          |
| Me lo solicitó más de una vez          | He begged it of me more than<br>once     |

147. *Lo* is omitted when the superlative is not limited in some way: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Á la larga los que más estudian<br>más aprenden | In the long run those who study<br>(the) most learn (the) most |
|---|--|

But —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Se quedó lo más lejos que pudo de<br>la escena | He remained the farthest that he<br>could from the scene |
|--|--|

148. Review the imperatives and learn the past anterior of the three regular conjugations, 170.

### 149. Ejercicio Diecisiete

1. Honra á tu (65) padre y á tu madre y no ames á los que no les (58) honran. 2. Conserve yo la vida y viva mi enemigo. 3. Comamos para vivir y no vivamos para comer. 4. Temed mi cólera, pero no temáis nada (112) de mi amor. 5. No tenga usted miedo de pensar antes de obrar. 6. El abogado habló docta y elocuentemente. 7. Mi hijo ha estudiado siempre su lección. 8. El tiple cantó de una manera encantadora (142, b). 9. Anden VV. más despacio, que estoy cansado. 10. Apenas hubo llegado que partió. 11. La bailarina bailó á la española.

12. Por consiguiente cuando hube acabado mi tarea, fuí (*I went*) á casa. 13. ¿Dónde ha vivido V. antes de venir aquí? 14. ¿Cuándo partieron de Madrid? 15. Ven (223) acá, hijita mía (67), y recita tu lección. 16. Ella está más ricamente vestida que su hermana. 17. El camino por donde vinieron (223) está en muy mal estado. 18. Entonces ella tocaba el piano más á menudo que ahora. 19. Generalmente los que más ganan más gastan. 20. Los bueyes no andan tan aprisa como los caballos. 21. ¡Cuán contenta está una buena madre cuando tiene sus (65) hijos alrededor de sí (58)!

22. Do not honor those (149, 1) who (89) do not deserve it (60). 23. From my friends [may] God<sup>3</sup> guard<sup>2</sup> me<sup>1</sup>; from my enemies I will guard myself. 24. Don't (you=*usted*) live to eat, but eat to live (149, 3). 25. Let us not fear [to] tell the truth. 26. When we had written our letters, we went out to (*a*) put them (59, *a*) in the letter-box. 27. She is rich[ly] and elegantly dressed (142, *a*). 28. It is true that he worked the whole day (135, NOTE), but in an idle way (142, *b*). 29. Last night, when we had attended the opera, we supped at the restaurant. 30. The day before yesterday we received two letters from Barcelona. 31. I shall accept his (65) offer willingly (143, *a*). 32. Years afterwards we discovered the fatal<sup>2</sup> error<sup>1</sup>. 33. Where have they bought those (80) goods? 34. How did you receive the news of his death? 35. He arrived here before nine o'clock. 36. The house in which (144, *a*) we live belongs to my uncle. 37. I work better when I sing. 38. Are you happy here? — Yes, very (145, NOTE). 39. He writes worse than she (58). 40. They have bought more than a dozen. 41. Those who have studied most have learned most (145, *a*). 42. They remained the nearest that they could (*pudieron*) to the shore. 43. The cruiser does not go as fast as the torpedo-boat (149, 20). 44. How slowly (104, *a*) the old-man<sup>2</sup> runs<sup>1</sup>!

## LECCIÓN DÉCIMOCTAVA

150. The prepositions *á, de, and en.*

**Á**, *to, at, in, into, on*, is used: —

*a. In expressions of time: —*

Á las diez; al mediodía

At ten o'clock; at midday

Á primeros de marzo

Early in March

Á fines de verano

Towards the end of summer

Llegará á tiempo

He will arrive in time

*b. Position, direction, etc.: —*

Á la puerta; á la derecha

At the door; to the right

Voy á casa; á casa de Juan

I am going home; to John's

Lo traduciré al inglés

I shall translate into English

*c. Manner, means, cause: —*

Hizo una reseña á grandes rasgos

He gave a description in large outlines

Vino á caballo; á pie

He came on horseback; on foot

Á fe de caballero

On the word of a gentleman

*d. Price, rate, etc.: —*

Se vende á tres pesetas el metro

It is sold at three *pesetas* a meter

Al contado; al fiado (á crédito)

For cash; on trust (credit)

151. **De**, *of, from, by, on, with, at*, is used to indicate: —

*a. Possession, origin, separation, etc.: —*

El libro de mi amigo

My friend's book

Vengo de casa de mi padre

I come from my father's (house)

Él vive de limosna

He lives by alms

*b. Time: —*

De día, de noche, de verano

By day, by night, in summer

Murió de poca edad

He died very young



*c. Cause, manner, characteristic, etc.: —*

|                                |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Temblar de miedo, de frío      | To tremble with fear, with cold |
| Teñir de azul; pintar de verde | To dye blue; to paint green     |
| La niña de los ojos azules     | The girl with the blue eyes     |

*d. State, condition, etc.: —*

|                           |                             |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Está de viaje en Europa   | He is traveling in Europe   |
| Prefiero quedarme de pies | I prefer to remain standing |
| Se hincó de rodillas      | He knelt down               |

*e. Occupation, use, profession, etc.: —*

|                       |                            |
|-----------------------|----------------------------|
| Se recibió de abogado | He was admitted to the bar |
| Me retiré de sargento | I retired as sergeant      |
| Una máquina de coser  | A sewing machine           |

**152. En, at, in, on, upon, into** (the general idea being *rest in* or *on*, or *motion in* or *into*).

*a. In time relations: —*

|   |  |
|---|--|
| En época en que estamos                 | At the period in which we are                    |
| La situación del banco en 21 de octubre | The condition of the bank on the 21st of October |
| De hoy en ocho días                     | To-day week                                      |
| De día en día                           | From day to day                                  |

*b. Position, direction, etc.: —*

|  |  |
|--|--|
| La comida está en la mesa                    | The dinner is on the table                         |
| Sentarse en la mesa, en la cama, en la silla | To sit down at the table, on the bed, in the chair |
| Vamos á pasear en el parque                  | Let's go to walk in the park                       |
| El vapor iba en su socorro                   | The steamer went to his rescue                     |

*c. Note also: —*

|                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Se castigará en juicio sumarísimo | He will be summarily punished   |
| En bien de España entera          | For the good of all Spain       |
| Pedir en justicia                 | To sue at law                   |
| Anda siempre en pleitos           | He is always going to law       |
| Lo valúo en cien pesos            | I value it at a hundred dollars |
| No se mide en las palabras        | He does not measure his words   |



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



31. I shall go (235) to Boston to-morrow morning and shall return at six o'clock P.M. 32. Drop by drop the blood trickled from (*de*) his (65) veins. 33. I will discount your (65) note at (the) five per cent. 34. He is (*está*) employed at two dollars a day. 35. (*De*.) The city's (13, *a*) streets are not numerous. 36. I have (164) a gold<sup>2</sup> (= of gold) watch<sup>1</sup> and a silver<sup>2</sup> (= of silver) chain<sup>1</sup>. 37. By night, according-to the Spanish<sup>2</sup> proverb<sup>1</sup>, all (135, 2d) cats are gray. 38. He was trembling with cold (151, *c*) when I found him (60). 39. The giant was tall of stature and sharp of wit. 40. My remedies are for sale (154, 15) in the drug store. 41. He serves (*sirve*) as steward and she works as seamstress. 42. He drank the glass of wine at one swallow. 43. (*En*.) On the morning of the twenty-fifth (51 and 53, *b*) we set out for Porto Rico. 44. We live on the corner of (the) Second<sup>2</sup> Street<sup>1</sup> and (the) Fifth Avenue. 45. My bed is (18, *b*) at the further-end of that (80) corridor. 46. The newspaper on which he works comes-out [on] Tuesdays and Fridays. 47. I think they will prolong the war to [the] serious damage of the country.

## LECCIÓN DÉCIMONONA

### 155. The prepositions *por* and *para*.

*Por*, *by*, *for*, *in*, *on*, *through*, *by means of*, *in place of*, *etc.*, is the most overworked of all Spanish prepositions. It can be mastered only by constant observation. It is used to express:—

#### *a. Time:—*

No durará por mucho tiempo  
Creo que cae por Pascua

It will not last for a long time  
I think it falls at Easter

#### *b. Place, movement, etc.:—*

Pasa por la calle  
Se escapó por la ventana  
Las aves vuelan por el aire

He passes along the street  
He escaped by the window  
The birds fly through the air

*c. Price, value: —*

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Venderé mi casa por mil pesos        | I will sell my house for \$1000          |
| Madera por valor de doscientos duros | Wood to the value of two hundred dollars |
| Un real por pieza                    | One <i>real</i> a piece                  |

*d. Cause, manner, means: —*

|                          |                                  |
|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Ella está loca por él    | She is madly in love with him    |
| Lo divide por la mitad   | He divides it through the middle |
| Lo hará por fuerza       | He will do it by force           |
| Ropa hecha por el sastre | Clothing made by the tailor      |

*e. Purpose, exchange, instead of, in behalf of, etc.: —*

|                              |   |
|------------------------------|---|
| Hubo un pleito por divorcio  | There was a suit for divorce                |
| Doy mi gabán por el de usted | I give my greatcoat (in exchange) for yours |
| Asisto por mi compañero      | I attend instead of my comrade              |
| Lo que V. ha hecho por mí    | What you have done for me                   |

*f. Note further: —*

|                                |                                   |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Fuí por Madrid á Toledo        | I went via Madrid to Toledo       |
| Echáronle por tierra           | They threw him to the ground      |
| Se le recibió por maestro      | He was received as teacher        |
| Preguntó por la salud del niño | He asked after the child's health |

*g. Por occurs likewise in many adverbial expressions: —*

|                                |                          |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Por ejemplo; por lo general    | For instance; in general |
| Por consiguiente; por completo | Consequently; completely |

**156. Para, for, to, in, by** (with an infinitive, *to, in order to*), expresses: —

*a. Destination, use, etc.: —*

|                              |                                    |
|------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Esta carta es para el correo | This letter is for the post office |
| No es útil para nada         | It is not useful for anything      |
| Partieron para el pueblo     | They set out for the village       |
| Una cuchara para sopa        | A soup spoon                       |

*b. Purpose, etc.: —*

|                           |                             |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Comemos para vivir        | We eat in order to live     |
| Sirve para hacerle tímido | It serves to make him timid |

*c. Time: —*

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Lo dejaremos para mañana                    | We shall leave it for to-morrow        |
| Para ese tiempo se conocerán los resultados | By that time the results will be known |

*d. Consideration, etc.: —*

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Para principiante no lo ha hecho mal   | For a beginner he has not done it badly.     |
| Es una grave ofensa para su reputación | It is a grave offense against his reputation |

*e. Note further: —*

|                          |                                  |
|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Leyó la relación para sí | He read the report to himself    |
| Dijo para sí: lo haré    | He said to himself: I will do it |

NOTE. — While the use of *por* and *para* is usually quite distinct, cases may arise where either may be used: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Callaré por (para) no dar disgusto á usted     | I will hold my tongue in order not to displease you   |
| Viene á caballo por (para) llegar más de prisa | He comes on horseback in order to arrive more quickly |

**157.** Learn the whole conjugation of *tener*, 164.

**158. Ejercicio Diecinueve**

1. Tendrá dos mil (51) duros por un año. 2. Una lluvia de cenizas estorbó la vista por instantes. 3. Luego revolvió la mirada por la mar y por el espacio. 4. Un viaje de inspección por las costas probará lo contrario. 5. ¿Cuánto ha pagado V. por ese (80) sombrero? — Tuve que (166, 3) pagar diez (51) pesetas. 6. Los regalos llamaron la atención por su elegancia. 7. La ciudad sufrió por falta de agua. 8. Por un golpe de buena fortuna no tuvo más que contribuir. 9. Explicó, por modo conciso, sus (65) razones para augurar éxito brillante. 10. La filosofía lucha por resolver este (80) problema. 11. Le doy (210) á usted el uno por el otro. 12. Habló elocuentemente por su amigo. 13. Ella le cogió por la mano. 14. Fué (*he went*) al bosque por leña y al manantial por agua. 15. Copia-

ron las cartas palabra por palabra y los nombres por orden alfabético. 16. Esta tela, señora, es muy buena para camisas. 17. Su caballo de usted (65, a) es bueno para correr, pero malo para tirar. 18. Dicen (216) que los portorriqueños son incapaces para el gobierno propio, pero no lo creemos. 19. Para lo futuro tendremos otras razones para ausentarnos. 20. Aquí está un almanaque para el año entrante. 21. Partiré mañana para Madrid. 22. Para el que (85) habita la ciudad la vida campesina es á menudo intolerable. 23. El ejército tenía pocos soldados aptos para la lucha. 24. Salgo (220) sin capa para (por) ir más ligero.

25. (Por.) At that-time a war had broken out (*pluperf.*) between the two countries. 26. The investigations along that (80) line will suffice to (*para*) convince (13, b) everybody. 27. A letter can (230) go from the United States to Manila for two cents. 28. The murderer deserves (the) death for it. 29. He sacrificed his (70) life for the love of his country. 30. We called him by his (65) name but he did not answer. 31. They began a suit for divorce (155, e). 32. Always I shall watch over thee (58), my darling (67). 33. He was impatient to defend his friends. 34. Do you take this (80) woman to wife? 35. Good for my nephew! exclaimed the general. 36. We refused their (65) offer for obvious<sup>2</sup> reasons<sup>1</sup>. 37. (Para.) I intend it for a friend of mine (69). 38. A penknife is good to cut one's nails (70). 39. That (80) house on the corner is for rent. 40. He will have money<sup>2</sup> enough<sup>1</sup> to pay his trip. 41. He studied to [be a] physician. 42. For the coming<sup>2</sup> month<sup>1</sup> we shall have better accommodations. 43. Already we have learned our (65) lessons for to-morrow. 44. They will depart (220) this afternoon for Manila. 45. The deed is incredible to many. 46. Since then she (58) does not exist for him, so-to-speak. 47. My work has been very beneficial for this republic. 48. To begin I will say (216) that he has taken the shadow for (*por*) the substance.

## LECCIÓN VIGÉSIMA

## CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

**159. Conjunctions** present no special difficulties which need to be treated at any length. The more common of the simple conjunctions are: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| mas, pero, sino, }<br>empero ( <i>rare</i> ), } <i>but</i> | que, <i>that, for, whether, and</i>              |
| ni, <i>nor</i> ; ni . . . ni, <i>neither . . . nor</i>     | á que, <i>that, until, I'll bet that</i>         |
| ó, ú (before <i>o</i> or <i>ho</i> ), <i>or</i>            | de que, <i>that, because</i>                     |
| ó sea, <i>or, that is</i>                                  | y, é (before <i>i</i> or <i>hi</i> ), <i>and</i> |
|  | si, <i>if, whether, suppose, why</i>             |

*a. Sino* is used in the second of two coördinate clauses, when the first is negatively contrasted with the second. Used in a sentence with a negative, it means *but* in the sense of *only*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Mis padres no viven en esta ciudad<br>sino en Toledo | My parents do not live in this<br>city, but in Toledo |
| Yo no llegué sino ayer por la tarde                  | I arrived only yesterday after-<br>noon               |

*b. Ó* becomes *ú* before a word beginning with *o* or *ho*. When two or more *ó*'s follow each other, the first is translated by *either*: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Llegarán á las onze ó á las doce          | They will arrive at eleven o'clock<br>or at noon |
| Sea demonio ú hombre yo le haré<br>frente | Be he devil or man I will face<br>him            |
| Ví ó al capitán ó á su semejanza          | I saw either the captain or his<br>double        |

*c. Que* commonly connects principal and subordinate clauses, and like the English *that* may be omitted. It has likewise certain idiomatic uses which can only be learned by practice: —

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| Creo que perdió su dinero jugando | I think he lost his money by<br>gambling |
| Permítame se lo diga á usted      | Allow me to tell it to you               |
| Justicia pide, que no la gracia   | He asks justice and not pardon           |
| ¡Socorro! ¡que me matan!          | Help! they are killing me!               |

*d.* *Á que* takes the place of the simple *que* after certain verbs as *invitar, instar, exhortar, esperar, aguardar, etc.*: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Invitaré á mis amigos á que pasen<br>un rato á bordo de mi yate | I shall invite my friends to pass a<br>short time aboard of my yacht |
| Aguardo á que venga   | I am waiting until he comes  |
| Á que no vendrá   | I'll bet he will not come  |

*e.* *De que* serves to introduce clauses after words which would, in other constructions, be followed by *de*: —

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| No hay duda de que llegue hoy | There is no doubt but that he<br>will arrive to-day |
|-------------------------------|---|

*f.* *Y* becomes *é* before the initials *i* or *hi* but not before *hie* or at the beginning of an interrogative sentence: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Fernando é Isabel eran reyes de<br>España | Ferdinand and Isabella were king<br>and queen of Spain |
| Hay tigres y hienas en África             | There are tigers and hyenas in<br>Africa               |

*g.* *Si* usually expresses a condition, but it has other uses, as: —

|                                  |   |
|----------------------------------|---|
| Dudamos si tiene bastante dinero | We doubt whether he has suffi-<br>cient money |
| Pero, hombre, si no tengo tiempo | But, man, suppose I have not the<br>time      |
| Si no sale jamás de casa         | Why, he never leaves home                     |

160. **Interjections** are common in Spanish colloquial discourse. They occur as: —

*a.* *Pure interjections*: —

|                             |                        |                                     |
|-----------------------------|------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| ¡ah! ¡oh!                   | } <i>oh! ah! alas!</i> | ¡cáspita! <i>zounds!</i>            |
| ¡ay! ¡guay!                 |                        | ¡huy! ( <i>pain</i> ) <i>oh me!</i> |
| ¡bah! <i>pshaw!</i>         |                        | ¡ojalá! <i>God grant!</i>           |
| ¡caramba! <i>the deuce!</i> |                        | ¡hola (ola)! <i>oh, hello!</i>      |

*b.* *Various parts of speech used interjectionally*: —

|                                |                                     |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| ¡al asesino! <i>murder!</i>    | ¡cuidado! <i>take care!</i>         |
| ¡al ladrón! <i>stop thief!</i> | ¡bravo! <i>bravo! good for you!</i> |



c. The names of holy persons and evil spirits are freely used by all classes, the Spanish not feeling the same aversion to their use as we do: —

¡cielos! *heavens!*

¡ave María! *hail Mary!*

¡Dios! *God!*

¡Virgen Santa! *Holy Virgin!*

¡por Dios! *for God's sake!*

¡Jesús! *or* ¡Jesús, María y José!

¡diablo! ¡demonio! *the deuce!*

¡Santo Dios! *Good Lord!*

d. Adjectives and *ay* and *guay* are connected by *de* with a noun or pronoun: —

¡triste de mí! *poor me!*

¡ay de tí! *alas for thee!*

¡pobre de Juan! *poor John!*

¡guay de la víctima! *woe to the victim!*

**161.** Review the parts of the regular conjugations so far learned and the whole conjugation of *tener*, 164.

## 162.

### Ejercicio Veinte

1. No ha llegado todavía, mas creo que vendrá (223). 2. Tenemos bastante dinero, pero no queremos comprarlo. 3. No vivíamos entonces en Madrid sino en Toledo. 4. No tengo sino diez (51) duros en mi cartera. 5. Creo que llegarán tarde ó temprano. 6. Dijo (216) el general que siete (51) ú ocho mil soldados bastarían para hacer frente al enemigo. 7. Al mismo tiempo cayó (213) enferma mi (65) madre; que rara vez una desgracia viene (223) sola. 8. ¡Socorro! que vienen (223) á lincharme (59, a), exclamó el pobre diablo. 9. Las Cortes instan al gobierno á que tome posesión de la bahía. 10. Les (58) exhortamos á ustedes á que no pierdan las esperanzas. 11. Aguardaremos aquí á que vengan (223) nuestros (65) amigos. 12. Tuvimos duda de que el proyecto llegara á ser ley. 13. Estoy (18, b) seguro de que él lo aceptará. 14. Padre é hijo son (18, b) lobos de la misma camada. 15. Nieve y hielo estorbaba el camino é hizo (218) casi imposible nuestro (65) progreso. 16. ¿Si será (164) verdad lo que (85) nos (58) contó? 17. No sabíamos si aceptarían las condiciones. 18. Pero,



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

## AUXILIARY VERBS

## SIMPLE TENSES

164.

## Infinitive Mood

|          |                |          |        |              |
|----------|----------------|----------|--------|--------------|
|          | <i>To have</i> |          |        | <i>To be</i> |
| Haber    |                | tener    | ser    | estar        |
|          | <i>Having</i>  |          |        | <i>Being</i> |
| Habiendo |                | teniendo | siendo | estando      |
|          | <i>Had</i>     |          |        | <i>Been</i>  |
| Habido   |                | tenido   | sido   | estado       |

## Indicative Mood

## PRESENT

*I have, thou hast, etc.**I am, thou art, etc.*

|                                |            |         |           |
|--------------------------------|------------|---------|-----------|
| 1. yo he                       | tengo      | soy     | estoy     |
| 2. tú has                      | tienes     | eres    | estás     |
| 2. usted ha                    | V. tiene   | V. es   | V. está   |
| 3. él, ella ha                 | tiene      | es      | está      |
| 1. nosotros hemos<br>(habemos) | tenemos    | somos   | estamos   |
| 2. vosotros habéis             | tenéis     | sois    | estáis    |
| 2. ustedes han                 | VV. tienen | VV. son | VV. están |
| 3. ellos, -as han              | tienen     | son     | están     |

## IMPERFECT

*I had, was having, etc.**I was, used to be, etc.*

|               |            |          |             |
|---------------|------------|----------|-------------|
| 1. había      | tenía      | era      | estaba      |
| 2. habías     | tenías     | eras     | estabas     |
| 2. V. había   | V. tenía   | V. era   | V. estaba   |
| 3. había      | tenía      | era      | estaba      |
| 1. habíamos   | teníamos   | éramos   | estábamos   |
| 2. habíais    | teníais    | erais    | estabais    |
| 2. VV. habían | VV. tenían | VV. eran | VV. estaban |
| 3. habían     | tenían     | eran     | estaban     |

*perfect*  
~~PRETERIT~~

*I had**I was*

|                 |              |            |                |
|-----------------|--------------|------------|----------------|
| 1. hube         | tuve         | fuí        | estuve         |
| 2. hubiste      | tuviste      | fuiste     | estuviste      |
| 2. V. hubo      | V. tuvo      | V. fué.    | V. estuvo      |
| 3. hubo         | tuvo         | fué        | estuvo         |
| 1. hubimos      | tuvimos      | fuiamos    | estuvimos      |
| 2. hubisteis    | tuvisteis    | fuisteis   | estuvisteis    |
| 2. VV. hubieron | VV. tuvieron | VV. fueron | VV. estuvieron |
| 3. hubieron     | tuvieron     | fueron     | estuvieron     |

**FUTURE***I shall (will) have**I shall (will) be*

|               |             |           |             |
|---------------|-------------|-----------|-------------|
| 1. habré      | tendré      | seré      | estaré      |
| 2. habrás     | tendrás     | serás     | estarás     |
| 2. V. habrá   | V. tendrá   | V. será   | V. estará   |
| 3. habrá      | tendrá      | será      | estará      |
| 1. habremos   | tendremos   | seremos   | estaremos   |
| 2. habréis    | tendréis    | seréis    | estaréis    |
| 2. VV. habrán | VV. tendrán | VV. serán | VV. estarán |
| 3. habrán     | tendrán     | serán     | estarán     |

**CONDITIONAL***I would (should) have**I would (should) be*

|                |              |            |              |
|----------------|--------------|------------|--------------|
| 1. habría      | tendría      | sería      | estaría      |
| 2. habrías     | tendrías     | serías     | estarías     |
| 2. V. habría   | V. tendría   | V. sería   | V. estaría   |
| 3. habría      | tendría      | sería      | estaría      |
| 1. habríamos   | tendríamos   | seríamos   | estaríamos   |
| 2. habríais    | tendríais    | seríais    | estaríais    |
| 2. VV. habrían | VV. tendrían | VV. serían | VV. estarían |
| 3. habrían     | tendrían     | serían     | estarían     |

## Imperative Mood

*Let me have, etc.**Let me be, etc.*

|                    |            |          |           |
|--------------------|------------|----------|-----------|
| 1. let me have     | tenga yo   | sea      | esté      |
| 2. have (thou)     | ten tú     | sé       | está      |
| 2. have (thou) not | no tengas  | no seas  | no estés  |
| 2. have (you)      | tenga V.   | sea V.   | esté V.   |
| 3. let him have    | tenga él   | sea él   | esté él   |
| 1. let us have     | tengamos   | seamos   | estemos   |
| 2. have ye         | tened      | sed      | estad     |
| 2. have ye not     | no tengáis | no seáis | no estéis |
| 2. have (you)      | tengan VV. | sean VV. | estén VV. |
| 3. let them have   | tengan     | sean     | estén     |

NOTE. — The imperative of *haber* is: *he tú, haya él, V., hayamos, habed, hayan ellos, VV.*, but it hardly can be said to be in use. See also 177, note.

## Subjunctive Mood

## PRESENT

*I may have**I may be*

|              |            |          |           |
|--------------|------------|----------|-----------|
| 1. haya      | tenga      | sea      | esté      |
| 2. hayas     | tengas     | seas     | estés     |
| 2. V. haya   | V. tenga   | V. sea   | V. esté   |
| 3. haya      | tenga      | sea      | esté      |
| 1. hayamos   | tengamos   | seamos   | estemos   |
| 2. hayáis    | tengáis    | seáis    | estéis    |
| 2. VV. hayan | VV. tengan | VV. sean | VV. estén |
| 3. hayan     | tengan     | sean     | estén     |

## IMPERFECT — FIRST FORM

*I would have**I would be*

|                 |              |            |                |
|-----------------|--------------|------------|----------------|
| 1. hubiera      | tuviera      | fuera      | estuviera      |
| 2. hubieras     | tuvieras     | fueras     | estuvieras     |
| 2. V. hubiera   | V. tuviera   | V. fuera   | V. estuviera   |
| 3. hubiera      | tuviera      | fuera      | estuviera      |
| 1. hubiéramos   | tuviéramos   | fuéramos   | estuviéramos   |
| 2. hubierais    | tuvierais    | fuerais    | estuvierais    |
| 2. VV. hubieran | VV. tuvieran | VV. fueran | VV. estuvieran |
| 3. hubieran     | tuvieran     | fueran     | estuvieran     |

## IMPERFECT — SECOND FORM

| <i>I should have</i> |              | <i>I should be</i> |                |
|----------------------|--------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1. hubiese           | tuviese      | fuese              | estuviese      |
| 2. hubieses          | tuvieses     | fueses             | estuvieses     |
| 2. V. hubiese        | V. tuviese   | V. fuese           | V. estuviese   |
| 3. hubiese           | tuviese      | fuese              | estuviese      |
| 1. hubiésemos        | tuviésemos   | fuésemos           | estuviésemos   |
| 2. hubieseis         | tuvieseis    | fueseis            | estuvieseis    |
| 2. VV. hubiesen      | VV. tuviesen | VV. fuesen         | VV. estuviesen |
| 3. hubiesen          | tuviesen     | fuesen             | estuviesen     |

## FUTURE

| <i>I shall have</i> |              | <i>I shall be</i> |                |
|---------------------|--------------|-------------------|----------------|
| 1. hubiere          | tuviere      | fuere             | estuviere      |
| 2. hubieres         | tuvieres     | fueres            | estuvieres     |
| 2. V. hubiere       | V. tuviere   | V. fuere          | V. estuviere   |
| 3. hubiere          | tuviere      | fuere             | estuviere      |
| 1. hubiéremos       | tuviéremos   | fuéremos          | estuviéremos   |
| 2. hubiereis        | tuviereis    | fueréis           | estuviereis    |
| 2. VV. hubieren     | VV. tuvieren | VV. fueren        | VV. estuvieren |
| 3. hubieren         | tuvieren     | fueren            | estuvieren     |

## COMPOUND TENSES

## Infinitive

| <i>To have had</i>         | <i>To have been</i>      |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|
| haber { habido<br>{ tenido | haber { sido<br>{ estado |

## Gerund

| <i>Having had</i>             | <i>Having been</i>          |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| habiendo { habido<br>{ tenido | habiendo { sido<br>{ estado |

## Indicative

**REMARK.**— As the compound tenses are formed by adding the past participle of the respective verbs to the simple tenses of *haber*, only the first person singular of each compound tense will be here given. The learner can turn back and get the others for himself.

## PERFECT

*I have had*  
 he { habido  
       { tenido

*I have been*  
 he { sido  
       { estado

## PLUPERFECT

*I had had*  
 había { habido  
        { tenido

*I had been*  
 había { sido  
        { estado

## PAST ANTERIOR

*When I had had*  
 cuando hube { habido  
                { tenido

*When I had been*  
 cuando hube { sido  
                { estado

## FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall have had*  
 habré { habido  
        { tenido

*I shall have been*  
 habré { sido  
        { estado

## CONDITIONAL PERFECT

*I might (would) have had*  
 habría { habido  
        { tenido

*I might (would) have been*  
 habría { sido  
        { estado

## Subjunctive

## PERFECT

*I may have had*  
 haya { habido  
       { tenido

*I may have been*  
 haya { sido  
       { estado

## PLUPERFECT — FIRST FORM

*I might have had*  
 hubiera { habido  
           { tenido

*I might have been*  
 hubiera { sido  
           { estado

## PLUPERFECT — SECOND FORM

*I might have had*hubiese { habido  
          { tenido*I might have been*hubiese { sido  
          { estado

## FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall (should) have had*hubiere { habido  
          { tenido*I shall (should) have been*hubiere { sido  
          { estadoUSES OF *haber*, *tener*, *ser*, *estar*

165. The principal office of *haber* is to form the compound tenses of other verbs, as illustrated above. The participle in such compounds never changes its form. Other uses are: —

*a.* As an independent verb, followed by *de* and an infinitive, to express *futurity, duty, obligation*: —

He de escribir una carta

I have to write a letter

Habrá de cantar

He will have to sing

*b.* The third person singular throughout all moods and tenses is used as an impersonal verb,

1. In expressions of time: —

Sí, le ví no ha mucho tiempo

Yes, I saw him not long ago

2. With *que* and an infinitive, to imply a general idea of *necessity* or *obligation*. In this and the following impersonal uses, *y* (there) is added to the present indicative, making *hay*: —

Eso es lo que hay que notar

That is what has to be noted

3. In the sense of *there is, there are*: —

Hay cientos de hombres en la calle

There are hundreds of men in the street

4. In speaking of distances: —

¿Cuánto hay de aquí á Boston?

How far is it from here to Boston?

*c.* While *haber* is no longer used with the general meaning of *to hold, to possess*, there are certain relics of its former use: —

Consejo habido, anunciamos nuestra política

A council having been held, we announced our policy



166. *Tener*, to hold, to possess, to have, has the following uses: —

1. In its primary meaning: —

Tengo una pluma en la mano      I hold (have) a pen in my hand

2. Idiomatically with certain nouns, where we should use the verb *to be* and the adjective: —

|                               |                      |             |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|-------------|
| <i>Tener hambre</i> , to have | hunger, hence, to be | hungry      |
| “ <i>sed</i> ,                | “ thirst,            | “ “ thirsty |
| “ <i>miedo</i> ,              | “ fear,              | “ “ afraid  |
| “ <i>sueño</i> ,              | “ sleep,             | “ “ sleepy  |
| “ <i>frío</i> ,               | “ cold,              | “ “ cold    |
| “ <i>calor</i> ,              | “ heat,              | “ “ warm    |
| “ <i>vergüenza</i> ,          | “ shame,             | “ “ ashamed |
| “ <i>razón</i> ,              | “ reason,            | “ “ right   |

*No tener razón*, not to have reason, hence, to be wrong

3. With *que* and an infinitive to express *duty* or *obligation*: —

Tengo que estudiar mi lección      I have to study my lesson

NOTE. — *Que*, however, in such connections, frequently means *something*, *anything*: —

¿Tiene V. que comer? — No, no      Have you anything to eat? —  
tengo (nada) que comer      No, I have nothing to eat

4. As an auxiliary to form the compound tenses of transitive verbs, especially in cases where we should put the participle after the object. Unlike *haber*, the participle agrees with the object in gender and number: —

Tengo escritas dos cartas      I have two letters written

But —

He escrito dos cartas      I have written two letters

167. See 18, *b*, for the meaning of *ser* and *estar*.

*a. De* following *estar* indicates occupation, *para*, readiness, and *por*, futurity: —



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## 170.

|                    |                  |                  |                       |
|--------------------|------------------|------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>P. Ind.</i> amo | <i>Inf.</i> amar | <i>Pret.</i> amé | <i>P. Part.</i> amado |
| “ temo             | “ temer          | “ temí           | “ temido              |
| “ vivo             | “ vivir          | “ viví           | “ vivido              |
| <i>Gerunds:</i>    | amando           | temiendo         | viviendo              |

## SIMPLE TENSES

## Indicative Mood

## PRESENT

## FIRST CONJUGATION

*I love, thou lovest,  
etc.*

yo am-o  
tú am-as  
usted am-a  
él am-a  
nosotros am-amos  
vosotros am-áis  
ustedes am-an  
ellos am-an

## SECOND CONJUGATION

*I fear, thou fearest,  
etc.*

tem-o  
tem-es  
V. tem-e  
tem-e  
tem-emos  
tem-éis  
VV. tem-en  
tem-en

## THIRD CONJUGATION

*I live, thou livest,  
etc.*

viv-o  
viv-es  
V. viv-e  
viv-e  
viv-imos  
viv-ís  
VV. viv-en  
viv-en

## IMPERFECT

*I loved, feared, lived; was loving, fearing, living; used to love, fear,  
live (163, a)*

|             |             |             |
|-------------|-------------|-------------|
| am-aba      | tem-ía      | viv-ía      |
| am-abas     | tem-ías     | viv-ías     |
| V. am-aba   | V. tem-ía   | V. viv-ía   |
| am-aba      | tem-ía      | viv-ía      |
| am-ábamos   | tem-íamos   | viv-íamos   |
| am-abais    | tem-íais    | viv-íais    |
| VV. am-aban | VV. tem-ían | VV. viv-ían |
| am-aban     | tem-ían     | viv-ían     |

|                       |                     |                      |                       |
|-----------------------|---------------------|----------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>P. Ind.</i> I love | <i>Inf.</i> to love | <i>Pret.</i> I loved | <i>P. Part.</i> loved |
| “ I fear              | “ to fear           | “ I feared           | “ feared              |
| “ I live              | “ to live           | “ I lived            | “ lived               |

*Gerunds:* loving fearing living

### Imperative Mood

#### FIRST CONJUGATION

*Let me love, etc.*

am-e yo  
 am-a tú  
 no am-es\*  
 am-e V., él  
 am-emos  
 am-ad  
 no am-éis\*  
 am-en VV., ellos

#### SECOND CONJUGATION

*Let me fear, etc.*

tem-a yo  
 tem-e tú  
 no tem-as\*  
 tem-a V., él  
 tem-amos  
 tem-ed  
 no tem-áis\*  
 tem-an VV., ellos

#### THIRD CONJUGATION

*Let me live, etc.*

viv-a yo  
 viv-e tú  
 no viv-as\*  
 viv-a V., él  
 viv-amos  
 viv-id  
 no viv-áis\*  
 viv-an VV., ellos

### Subjunctive Mood

#### PRESENT

*I may love*

am-e  
 am-es  
 V. am-e  
 am-e  
 am-emos  
 am-éis  
 VV. am-en  
 am-en

*I may fear*

tem-a  
 tem-as  
 V. tem-a  
 tem-a  
 tem-amos  
 tem-áis  
 VV. tem-an  
 tem-an

*I may live*

viv-a  
 viv-as  
 V. viv-a  
 viv-a  
 viv-amos  
 viv-áis  
 VV. viv-an  
 viv-an

\* See 177, NOTE.

*Or*

## Indicative

## PRETERIT

*W**I loved**I feared**I lived*

am-é

tem-í

viv-í

am-aste

tem-iste

viv-iste

V. am-ó

V. tem-ió

V. viv-ió

am-ó

tem-ió

viv-ió

am-amos

tem-imos

viv-imos

am-asteis

tem-isteis

viv-isteis

VV. ama-ron

VV. temie-ron

VV. vivie-ron

ama-ron

temie-ron

vivie-ron

## FUTURE

*I shall (will) love**I shall (will) fear**I shall (will) live*

amar-é

temer-é

vivir-é

amar-ás

temer-ás

vivir-ás

V. amar-á

V. temer-á

V. vivir-á

amar-á

temer-á

vivir-á

amar-emos

temer-emos

vivir-emos

amar-éis

temer-éis

vivir-éis

VV. amar-án

VV. temer-án

VV. vivir-án

amar-án

temer-án

vivir-án

## CONDITIONAL

*I would (should)  
love**I would (should)  
fear**I would (should)  
live*

amar-ía

temer-ía

vivir-ía

amar-ías

temer-ías

vivir-ías

V. amar-ía

V. temer-ía

V. vivir-ía

amar-ía

temer-ía

vivir-ía

amar-íamos

temer-íamos

vivir-íamos

amar-íais

temer-íais

vivir-íais

VV. amar-ían

VV. temer-ían

VV. vivir-ían

amar-ían

temer-ían

vivir-ían

## Subjunctive

## IMPERFECT — FIRST FORM

*I should (would)**love*

ama-ra

ama-ras

V. ama-ra

ama-ra

amá-ramos

ama-raís

VV. ama-ran

ama-ran

*I should (would)**fear*

temie-ra

temie-ras

V. temie-ra

temie-ra

temié-ramos

temie-raís

VV. temie-ran

temie-ran

*I should (would)**live*

vivie-ra

vivie-ras

V. vivie-ra

vivie-ra

vivié-ramos

vivie-raís

VV. vivie-ran

vivie-ran

## IMPERFECT — SECOND FORM

*I should (would)**love*

ama-se

ama-ses

V. ama-se

ama-se

amá-semos

ama-seís

VV. ama-sen

ama-sen

*I should (would)**fear*

temie-se

temie-ses

V. temie-se

temie-se

temié-semos

temie-seís

VV. temie-sen

temie-sen

*I should (would)**live*

vivie-se

vivie-ses

V. vivie-se

vivie-se

vivié-semos

vivie-seís

VV. vivie-sen

vivie-sen

## FUTURE

*I shall love*

ama-re

ama-res

V. ama-re

ama-re

amá-remos

ama-reís

VV. ama-ren

ama-ren

*I shall fear*

temie-re

temie-res

V. temie-re

temie-re

temié-remos

temie-reís

VV. temie-ren

temie-ren

*I shall live*

vivie-re

vivie-res

V. vivie-re

vivie-re

vivié-remos

vivie-reís

VV. vivie-ren

vivie-ren

## COMPOUND TENSES

## Infinitive

haber amado — temido — vivido  
*to have loved — feared — lived*

## Gerund

habiendo amado — temido — vivido  
*having loved — feared — lived*

*habiendo*

*Part participle*

~~Indicative~~

*Part*

## PERFECT

*I have loved*  
 he amado

*I have feared*  
 he temido

*I have lived*  
 he vivido

## PLUPERFECT

*I had loved*  
 había amado

*I had feared*  
 había temido

*I had lived*  
 había vivido

## PAST ANTERIOR

*I had loved*  
 hube amado

*I had feared*  
 hube temido

*I had lived*  
 hube vivido

## FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall (will) have*  
*loved*  
 habré amado

*I shall (will) have*  
*feared*  
 habré temido

*I shall (will) have*  
*lived*  
 habré vivido

## COMPOUND TENSES

## Subjunctive

## PERFECT

*I may have loved*  
haya amado

*I may have feared*  
haya temido

*I may have lived*  
haya vivido

## PLUPERFECT — FIRST FORM

*I had (should have)*  
*loved*  
hubiera amado

*I had (should have)*  
*feared*  
hubiera temido

*I had (should*  
*have) lived*  
hubiera vivido

## PLUPERFECT — SECOND FORM

*I had (should have)*  
*loved*  
hubiese amado

*I had (should have)*  
*feared*  
hubiese temido

*I had (should*  
*have) lived*  
hubiese vivido

## FUTURE PERFECT

*I (shall) should have*  
*loved*  
hubiere amado

*I (shall) should have*  
*feared*  
hubiere temido

*I (shall) should*  
*have lived*  
hubiere vivido

## CONDITIONAL PERFECT

*I would (should) have*  
*loved*  
habría amado

*I would (should) have*  
*feared*  
habría temido

*I would (should)*  
*have lived*  
habría vivido



## XXIII

## ORTHOGRAPHIC CHANGES

171. In the conjugation of some regular, as well as irregular, verbs, it is necessary, before certain terminations, to change the final letters of the stem before adding the personal endings, in order to conform to the Spanish method of spelling. All such verbs may be reduced to the following ten classes. Verbs whose infinitives terminate —

- |  |                               |
|--|-------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>car</i> change <i>c</i> to <i>qu</i>                        | } before <i>e</i>             |
| 2. in <i>gar</i> insert <i>u</i>                                     |                               |
| 3. in <i>guar</i> change <i>u</i> to <i>ü</i>                        |                               |
| 4. in <i>zar</i> " <i>z</i> to <i>c</i>                              |                               |
| 5. in <i>cer</i> preceded by a consonant change <i>c</i> to <i>z</i> | } before <i>a</i> or <i>o</i> |
| 6. in <i>cir</i> " " " " <i>c</i> to <i>z</i>                        |                               |
| 7. in <i>ger</i> change <i>g</i> to <i>j</i> . . . . .               |                               |
| 8. in <i>gir</i> " <i>g</i> to <i>j</i> . . . . .                    |                               |
| 9. in <i>quir</i> " <i>qu</i> to <i>c</i> . . . . .                  |                               |
| 10. in <i>guir</i> drop <i>u</i> . . . . .                           |                               |

These changes can occur only in the first person singular of the present indicative and preterit, in the present subjunctive, and in the imperative.

## EXAMPLES

1. *Tocar, touch, play (an instrument)*: Pres. Sub. *toque, toques*, etc. Pret. *toqué, tocaste*, etc.
2. *Pagar, pay*: Pres. Sub. *pague, pagues*, etc. Pret. *pagué, pagaste*, etc.
3. *Averiguar, investigate*: Pres. Sub. *averigüe, averigües*, etc. Pret. *averigüé, averiguaste*, etc.
4. *Forzar, force*: Pres. Sub. *fuerce, fuerces*, etc. Pret. *forcé, forzaste*, etc.
5. *Vencer, conquer*: Pres. Ind. *venzo, vences*, etc. Pres. Sub. *venza, venzas*, etc.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

**Decir, to say:** pret. 3d pl. *dijeron* (not *dijieron*)

Imp. Sub. 1. *dijera*, 2. *dijese*, fut. sub. *dijere*

**Bullir, to boil:** gerund *bullendo* (not *bulliendo*)

Pret. *bulló*, *bulleron* (not *bullió*, *bullieron*)

Imp. Sub. 1. *bullera*, 2. *bullese*, fut. sub. *bullere*

**Bruñir, to burnish:** gerund *bruñendo* (not *bruñiendo*)

Pret. *bruñó*, *bruñeron* (not *bruñió*, *bruñieron*)

Imp. Sub. 1. *bruñera*, 2. *bruñese*, fut. sub. *bruñere*

*d.* It is a principle of the Spanish vowel-system that *i*, at the beginning of a word and followed by a vowel, or in the middle of a word between two vowels, unless in this case it bears the syllabic accent, is changed to *y* as in year, *i.e.* is consonantized. It will be particularly helpful to remember this in conjugating Spanish verbs: —

**Ir, to go:** gerund *yendo* (not *iendo*)

**Leer, to read:** gerund *leyendo* (not *leiendo*)

Pret. *leyó*, *leyeron* (not *leió*, *leieron*)

Imp. Sub. 1. *leyera*, 2. *leyese*, fut. sub. *leyere*

**Huir, to flee:** gerund *huyendo* (not *huiendo*)

Pret. *huyó*, *huyeron* (not *huió*, *huieron*)

Imp. Sub. 1. *huyera*, 2. *huyese*, fut. sub. *huyere*

## XXIV

### MEMORY-AIDS TO LEARNING THE CONJUGATIONS

**172.** A comparison of the second and third conjugations shows that the terminations of the third are the same as those of the second, except in the first and second persons plural of the present indicative and in the second person plural of the imperative. These have been printed in heavy type to attract attention.

**173.** The following synopsis will show that it is possible, by a small effort of memory, to grasp the whole mechanism of the

Spanish verb-system. The parts in parenthesis are to be dropped, leaving the stem, which is to be added to the various endings that follow.

### FORMATION OF TENSES

a. The present indicative first person singular forms: —

The Pres. Sub.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{am}-(o) \text{ — am-e, es, e, emos, éis, en} \\ \text{tem}-(o) \text{ — tem-a, as, a, amos, áis, an} \\ \text{viv}-(o) \text{ — viv-a, as, a, amos, áis, an} \end{array} \right.$

Six exceptions.

b. The infinitive forms: —

1. Gerund  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{am}-(ar) \text{ — am-ando} \\ \text{tem}-(er) \text{ — tem-iendo} \\ \text{viv}-(ir) \text{ — viv-iendo} \end{array} \right.$

Twenty-three exceptions.

2. P. Part.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{am}-(ar) \text{ — am-ado} \\ \text{tem}-(er) \text{ — tem-ido} \\ \text{viv}-(ir) \text{ — viv-ido} \end{array} \right.$

About a dozen exceptions

3. Imp. Ind.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{am}-(ar) \text{ — am-aba, abas, aba, ábamos, abais, aban} \\ \text{tem}-(er) \text{ — tem-ía, ías, ía, íamos, íais, ían} \\ \text{viv}-(ir) \text{ — viv-ía, ías, ía, íamos, ías, ían} \end{array} \right.$

Only three exceptions: ser, era; ver, veía; ir, iba.

4. Fut.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amar-é, ás, á, emos, éis, án} \\ \text{temer-é, ás, á, emos, éis, án} \\ \text{vivir-é, ás, á, emos, éis, án} \end{array} \right.$

5. Cond.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amar-ía, ías, ía, íamos, íais, ían} \\ \text{temer-ía, ías, ía, íamos, íais, ían} \\ \text{vivir-ía, ías, ía, íamos, íais, ían} \end{array} \right.$

Twelve exceptions for the future and conditional; but observe that, in these, the endings for all three conjugations are the same.\*

\* This comes from the fact that the future and conditional are, strictly speaking, compound tenses, being formed from the infinitive and the present and imperfect indicative of *haber*: *he, has, ha*, etc., and *había, habías, había*, etc., contracted to *hía, hías, hía*, etc., the *h* being

6. Imperative 2d sing. and pl.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{am-(ar)} \text{ — am-a, am-ad} \\ \text{tem-(er)} \text{ — tem-e, tem-ed} \\ \text{viv-(ir)} \text{ — viv-e, viv-id} \end{array} \right.$

Twelve exceptions for the 2d sing. The other parts of the imperative are identical with the corresponding persons of the present subjunctive.

c. The preterit third person plural forms the imperfect subjunctive, first and second forms, and the future subjunctive: —

(amé)

ama-(ron)  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ama-ra, ras, ra, amá-ramos, ama-raís, ran} \\ \text{ama-se, ses, se, amá-semos, ama-seís, sen} \\ \text{ama-re, res, re, amá-remos, ama-reís, ren} \end{array} \right.$

(temí)

temie-(ron)  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{temie-ra, ras, ra, temié-ramos, temie-raís, ran} \\ \text{temie-se, ses, se, temié-semos, temie-seís, sen} \\ \text{temie-re, res, re, temié-remos, temie-reís, ren} \end{array} \right.$

(viví)

vivie-(ron)  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{vivie-ra, ras, ra, vivié-ramos, vivie-raís, ran} \\ \text{vivie-se, ses, se, vivié-semos, vivie-seís, sen} \\ \text{vivie-re, res, re, vivié-remos, vivie-reís, ren} \end{array} \right.$

d. The past participle, with the simple tenses of *haber*, forms all the compound tenses: —

|                      |         |                         |
|----------------------|---------|-------------------------|
| <i>Perf.</i>         | he      | } amado, temido, vivido |
| <i>Plup.</i>         | había   |                         |
| <i>P. Ant.</i>       | hube    |                         |
| <i>F. Perf.</i>      | habré   |                         |
| <i>Con. Perf.</i>    | habría  |                         |
| <i>Perf. Sub.</i>    | haya    |                         |
| 1. <i>Plup. Sub.</i> | hubiera |                         |
| 2. <i>Plup. Sub.</i> | hubiese |                         |
| <i>F. Perf. Sub.</i> | hubiere |                         |

finally dropped when the two words were run together. In the older books the parts will be found separated: —

Contarle he de dónde la risa procedió. I shall tell you from whence the  
—*Lazarillo de Tormes.* laugh proceeded.

Responderles hía yo, etc. I would reply to them, etc.

—*Don Quijote.*



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## PRETERIT

*I was loved*  
 fuí amado, -a

## IMPERFECT — FIRST FORM

*I should (would) be loved*  
 fuera amado, -a

## FUTURE

*I shall (will) be loved*  
 seré amado, -a

## IMPERFECT — SECOND FORM

*I should (would) be loved*  
 fuese amado, -a

## CONDITIONAL

*I should (would) be loved*  
 sería amado, -a

## FUTURE

*I shall (will) be loved*  
 fuere amado, -a

## COMPOUND TENSES

*Infinitive:* haber sido amado, -a, -os, -as, *to have been loved*

*Gerund:* habiendo sido amado, -a, -os, -as, *having been loved*

## Indicative

## PERFECT

*I have been loved*  
 he sido amado, -a

## Subjunctive

## PERFECT

*I may have been loved*  
 haya sido amado, -a

## PLUPERFECT

*I had been loved*  
 había sido amado, -a

## PLUPERFECT — FIRST FORM

*I should (would) have been loved*  
 hubiera sido amado, -a

## PAST ANTERIOR

*I had been loved*  
 hube sido amado, -a

## PLUPERFECT — SECOND FORM

*I should (would) have been loved*  
 hubiese sido amado, -a

## FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall have been loved*  
 habré sido amado, -a

## FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall have been loved*  
 hubiere sido amado, -a

## CONDITIONAL PERFECT

*I should (would) have been loved*  
 habría sido amado, -a

## PASSIVE CONSTRUCTIONS

175. While the passive is a well-recognized principle of Spanish grammar, its use is extremely restricted as compared with the English passive. As a substitute we may employ the active and say, for instance, *Mis padres me aman*, *My parents love me*, instead of *Yo soy amado de mis padres*, *I am loved by my parents*. Another and more common substitute is the reflexive verb, which will be treated further on. See 177 and following sections.

**By** is rendered by **por**, if the action is an outward, visible one, and preferably by **de**, although **por** may be used, when the action of the verb concerns the faculties of the mind and heart, as, *to love, hate, fear, esteem, honor*, etc.: —

El perro es conducido por el mu- The dog is led by the boy  
chacho

Ella era amada de todos por su She was loved by all for her  
bondad goodness

V. es estimado de (por) todo el You are esteemed by everybody  
mundo

## XXVI

## REFLEXIVE VERBS

176. Generally speaking, a reflexive verb may be said to be one whose action is reflected back upon a pronoun which represents the same person or thing as the subject. This pronoun may be either the direct or indirect object; but the verb need not necessarily be transitive to admit of the reflexive form. The reflexive nature of the verb will not always appear in the English rendering. For instance: *Me alabo*, *I praise myself*; *Se lisonjea*, *He flatters himself*; but *Me marchó*, *I am going (away)*; *Nos levantamos*, *We rise*.



a. Note the suppression, in the imperative, of the *s* of the first person plural, and the *d* of the second person plural, when the pronoun is attached to the end of the verb: *portémonos* for *portémosnos*, let us behave ourselves, and *portaos* for *portados*, behave yourselves. The only exception is *idos* from *irse*, to go away.

REMARK. — The accent has to be marked in verbs of the 3d conjugation: *vestíos*, dress yourselves.

177.

## MODEL VERB

*Infinitive:* portarse, to behave oneself

*Gerund:* portándose, behaving oneself

## Indicative — PRESENT

*I behave myself, etc.*

me porto

te portas

V. se porta

se porta

nos portamos

os portáis

VV. se portan

se portan

## Subjunctive — PRESENT

*I may behave myself, etc.*

me porte

te portes

V. se porte

se porte

nos portemos

os portéis

VV. se porten

se porten

## Imperative

## a. Affirmative

pórtate, behave (thou)

pórtese V., behave (you)

pórtese, let him behave

portémonos, let us behave

portaos, behave (ye)

pórtense VV., behave (you)

pórtense, let them behave

## Negative

no te portes, behave (thou) not

no se porte V., behave not

no se porte, let him not behave

no nos portemos, let us not behave

no os portéis, behave (ye) not

no se porten VV., behave not

no se porten, let them not behave

Note that, in the affirmative, the reflexive pronouns follow and are attached to the verb, while, in the negative, they precede; also that



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

La ropa sucia se debe lavar en casa    Dirty linen ought to be washed at home

Se venden caballos á precios baratísimos    Horses sold at very low prices

**180. Reciprocal verbs.** Certain reflexive verbs represent two or more persons, or things, as mutually acting upon each other. In such cases, instead of *mismos, el uno . . . el otro* or *uno . . . otro* may be used for emphasis, the first of the pair being syntactically nominative, the second, governed by a preposition: —

Nos felicitamos el uno al otro    We congratulate each other

VV. se acercan los unos á los otros    You approach one another

Se aman unas á otras    They love one another

## XXVII

### IMPERSONAL VERBS

**181.** Strictly defined, an impersonal verb is one which has no personal agent and usually indicates the workings of the laws of nature. The most common of this class only will be here given: —

| INFINITIVE                        | PRES. IND. | PRES. SUB. |
|-----------------------------------|------------|------------|
| Amanecer, <i>to dawn</i>          | amanece    | amanezca   |
| Anochecer, <i>to become night</i> | anochece   | anochezca  |
| Helar, <i>to freeze</i>           | hiela      | hieles     |
| Deshelar, <i>to thaw</i>          | deshiela   | deshiele   |
| Llover, <i>to rain</i>            | llueve     | llueva     |
| Nevar, <i>to snow</i>             | nieva      | nieve      |
| Tronar, <i>to thunder</i>         | truenas    | truenes    |

*a.* The other tenses of the above are all regular and follow the conjugations indicated by their respective infinitive endings. *Amanecer* and *anochecer* are also used personally in the sense of *to arrive at dawn* and *to arrive at nightfall*: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Amanecí en Madrid y anocheceí en<br>Segovia | I arrived in Madrid at dawn and<br>in Segovia at nightfall |
| Amanecerán mejores días                     | Better days will dawn                                      |

*b. Hacer, to do, to make* (conjugated in 218), is used impersonally in numerous combinations in speaking of the weather and time: —

|                               |                               |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Hace calor, frío, buen tiempo | It is hot, cold, good weather |
| Hace un año, dos meses        | A year, two months ago        |

See 165 *b*, for *haber* used impersonally.

## XXVIII

### IRREGULAR VERBS

182. In the broadest sense, an irregular verb is one whose conjugation does not agree in every particular with one of the three model verbs given in 170. So defined, there are over eight hundred irregular verbs in Spanish, but it is found that all but about thirty may be arranged in certain classes, in which the variation from the model will be regular and constant. Many of these variations are mere letter-changes and have been fully explained in 171. They should now be reviewed and mastered. The rules for the formation of tenses, set forth in 173, should also be learned.

183. In the development of Spanish words from Latin, it is found that *ǣ* breaks up into *ie* and *ø* into *ue* whenever the tonic (syllabic) accent falls on these letters: —

| LATIN                                   | SPANISH         |
|---|-----------------|
| <i>Dens</i> ( <i>dentis</i> ), tooth    | <i>diente</i>   |
| <i>Certus</i> , certain                 | <i>cierto</i>   |
| <i>Nego</i> , I deny                    | <i>niego</i>    |
| <i>Fons</i> ( <i>fontis</i> ), fountain | <i>f fuente</i> |
| <i>Bonus</i> , good                     | <i>bueno</i>    |
| <i>Dormio</i> , I sleep                 | <i>duermo</i>   |

It is of the highest importance to keep this simple principle in mind when learning Spanish irregular verbs. It will be seen that the vowel changes under the influence of the tonic accent, but as soon as this accent shifts to another syllable, the original vowel is restored. This vowel-change is indicated by **heavy type**, which is also used to call attention to the stems from which the derivative tenses are formed (see 173).

NOTE. — As *usted* and *ustedes* take always the same form as the third person: *usted, él ama, ustedes, ellos aman*, only one form for both will be given in conjugating the irregular verbs.

184. All verbs referable to any one of the following classes have uniformly the same irregularities that appear in the model verb of their respective classes, and no others, where none are specified. As the imperative of the first person singular occurs very seldom, it will not be given in the irregular verbs.

### CLASS I

185. **Pienso, pensar, pensé, pensado, to think.**

*Pres. Ind.* piens-o, piensas, piensa, pensamos, pensáis, piensan

*Pres. Sub.* piens-e, pienses, piense, pensemos, penséis, piensen

*Imperat.* piensa, piense, pensemos, pensad, piensen

Other tenses regular.

186. **Errar, to err, miss, falls under Class I, but is also subject to the orthographic law laid down in 171, d. Hence: —**

*Pres. Ind.* yerr-o, yerras, yerra, erramos, erráis, yerran

*Pres. Sub.* yerr-e, yerres, yerre, erremos, erréis, yerren

*Imperat.* yerra, yerre, erremos, errad, yerren

Other tenses regular.

187. **Entiendo, entender, entendí, entendido, to understand.**



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



**191.** Muerdo, **morder**, mordí, mordido, *to bite*.

*Pres. Ind.* muerd-o, -es, -e, mordemos, mordéis, muerden

*Pres. Sub.* muerd-a, -as, -a, mordamos, mordáis, muerdan

*Imperat.* muerde, muerda, mordamos, mordered, muerdan

Other tenses regular.

**192.** Vuelvo, **volver**, volví, **vuelto**, *to return*.

Absuelvo, **absolver**, absolví, **absuelto**, *to absolve*.

Disuelvo, **disolver**, disolví, **disuelto**, *to dissolve*.

Resuelvo, **resolver**, resolví, **resuelto**, *to resolve*.

All verbs in **-olver** change their stem-vowels like *morder*, and have the past participle in **-uelto**, but are otherwise regular in their class.

**193.** Tonic *o* of **oler** changes to *hue*.

Huelo, **oler**, olí, olido, *to smell*.

*Pres. Ind.* huel-o, hueles, huele, olemos, oléis, huelen

*Pres. Sub.* huel-a, huelas, huela, olamos, oláis, huelan

*Imperat.* huele, huela, olamos, oled, huelan

Other tenses regular.

### CLASS III

**194.** Verbs of this class belong exclusively to the third conjugation. They not only break up the tonic vowels *e* and *o* into *ie* and *ue* respectively, but substitute *i* and *u* for them in the first and second persons plural of the subjunctive and first person plural of the imperative as well as in the third person singular and plural of the preterit and the tenses derived from the latter.

**195.** Siento, **sentir**, sentí, sentido, *to feel, regret*.

*Pres. Ind.* sient-o, sientes, siente, sentimos, sentís, sienten

*Pres. Sub.* sient-a, sientas, sienta, sintamos, sintáis, sientan

*Imperat.* siente, sienta, sintamos, sentid, sientan

*Imperf.* sentía, -ías, -ía, sentíamos, sentíais, sentían

*Fut.* sentir-é, -ás, -á, sentiremos, sentiréis, sentirán

*Cond.* sentir-ía, -ías, -ía, sentiríamos, sentiríais, sentirían

*Pret.* sentí, -iste, sintió, sentimos, sentisteis, sintie-ron

1. *Imp. Sub.* sintie-ra, -ras, -ra, sintiéramos, sintierais, sintieran

2. *Imp. Sub.* sintie-se, -ses, -se, sintiésemos, sintieseis, sintiesen

*Fut. Sub.* sintie-re, -res, -re, sintiéremos, sintiereis, sintieren

*Gerund.* sintiendo

196. *Erguir*, to straighten up, to strut with pride, has as a tonic stem either *yerg* or *irg*. Elsewhere it follows the conjugation of *sentir*.

*Yergo*, }  
*Irgo*, } *erguir*, *erguí*, *erguido*

*Pres. Ind.* *yerg*-o, *yergues*, -e, } *erguimos*, *erguís* } *yerguen*  
*irg*-o, *irgues*, -e, } } *irguen*

*Pres. Sub.* *yerga*, -as, -a, } *irgamos*, *irgáis* } *yergan*  
*irga*, -as, -a, } } *irgan*

*Imperat.* *yergue*, *yerga*, } *irgamos*, *erguid* } *yergan*  
*irgue*, *irga*, } } *irgan*

*Pret.* *erguí*, -iste, *irguió*, *erguimos*, *erguisteis*, *irguie*-ron

*Sub.* 1. *irguie*-ra, 2. *irguie*-se, *Fut. Sub.* *irguie*-re

*Gerund.* *irguiendo* ✓

197. The present stem-vowel of *adquirir*, to acquire, and *inquirir*, to inquire for, changes to *ie*, when accented, like the *e* of *sentir*, but remains intact elsewhere: —

*Adquiero*, *adquirir*, *adquirí*, *adquirido*

*Inquiero*, *inquirir*, *inquirí*, *inquirido*

*Pres. Ind.* *adquier*-o, -es, -e, *adquirimos*, *adquirís*, *adquieren*

*Pres. Sub.* *adquier*-a, -as, -a, *adquiramos*, *adquiráis*, *adquieran*

*Imperat.* *adquier*-e, -a, *adquiramos*, *adquirid*, *adquieran*

And so *inquirir*. All other parts regular.

198. *Duermo*, *dormir*, *dormí*, *dormido*, to sleep.

*Pres. Ind.* *duerm*-o, *duermes*, *duerme*, *dormimos*, *dormís*, *duermen*

*Pres. Sub.* *duerm*-a, -as, -a, *durmamos*, *durmáis*, *duerman*



**Imperat.** duerme, duerma, durmamos, dormid, duerman

**Imperf.** dormía, -ías, -ía, dormíamos, dormíais, dormían

**Fut.** dormir-é, -ás, -á, dormiremos, dormiréis, dormirán

**Cond.** dormir-ía, -ías, -ía, dormiríamos, dormiríais, dormirían

**Pret.** dormí, -iste, durmió, dormimos, dormisteis, durmie-ron

1. **Imp. Sub.** durmie-ra, -ras, -ra, durmiéramos, -erais, durmieran

2. **Imp. Sub.** durmie-se, -ses, -se, durmiésemos, -eseis, durmiesen

**Fut. Sub.** durmie-re, -res, -re, durmiéremos, -ereis, durmieren

**Gerund.** durmiendo

**199. Morir, to die, premorir, to die before another,** are conjugated exactly like *dormir* above, but have the past participles **muerto** and **premuerto**.

**NOTE.** — The past participle *muerto* is also used with an active signification: —

Fué muerto uno de ellos

One of them was killed

El policía ha muerto al ladrón

The policeman has killed the thief

**200. Pudrir and podrir, to rot,** has had a double conjugation based on the two infinitives, but, excepting the past participle **podrido**, the Spanish Academy recommends that it be conjugated regularly throughout on *pudrir*.

#### CLASS IV

**201.** In the conjugation of verbs of the fourth class the *e* of the infinitive stem, when accented, becomes *i*. This change is likewise extended to the unaccented stem-vowel in the third persons singular and plural of the preterit and to the derivative forms of the latter.

**202. Pido, pedir, pedí, pedido, to ask for, beg.**

**Pres. Ind.** pid-o, pides, pide, pedimos, pedís, piden

**Pres. Sub.** pid-a, pidas, pida, pidamos, pidáis, pidan

**Imperat.** pide, pida, pidamos, pedid, pidan



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

## CLASS V

**205.** To the fifth class belong all verbs in *-uir* (except *inmiscuirse*, to meddle with) and *-güir*. Their peculiarity is that, except before *i*, they retain, in the present stem, the *i* of the infinitive, and this *i*, falling between two vowels, is consonantized to *y* according to the orthographic law stated in 171, *d*. The diaeresis of those in *-güir* is dropped as unnecessary before the consonant *y*.

**206.** Huyo, **huír**, \* huí, huido, *to flee, run away.*

*Pres. Ind.* huy-o, huyes, huye, huimos, huís, huyen

*Pres. Sub.* huy-a, -as, -a, huyamos, huyáis, huyan

*Imperat.* huye, huya, huyamos, huid, huyan

*Imperf.* huía, -ías, -ía, huíamos, huíais, huían

*Fut.* huir-é, -ás, -á, huiremos, huiréis, huirán

*Cond.* huir-ía, -ías, -ía, huiríamos, huiríais, huirían

*Pret.* huí, -iste, huyó, huimos, huisteis, huye-ron

1. *Imp. Sub.* huye-ra, -ras, -ra, huyéramos, -erais, huyeran

2. *Imp. Sub.* huye-se, -ses, -se, huyésemos, -eseis, huyesen

*Fut. Sub.* huye-re, -res, -re, huyéremos, -ereis, huyeren

*Gerund.* huyendo

**207.** Arguyo, **argüír**, argüí, argüido, *to argue.*

*Pres. Ind.* arguy-o, arguyes, arguye, argüimos, argüís, arguyen

*Pres. Sub.* arguy-a, -as, -a, arguyamos, arguyáis, arguyan

*Imperat.* arguye, arguya, arguyamos, argüid, arguyan

*Imperf.* argüía, -ías, -ía, argüíamos, argüíais, argüían

*Fut.* argüir-é, -ás, -á, argüiremos, argüiréis, argüirán

*Cond.* argüir-ía, -ías, -ía, argüiríamos, -íais, argüirían

*Pret.* argüí, -iste, arguyó, argüimos, argüisteis, arguye-ron

\* Authorities differ as to the use or omission of the written accent on the infinitive ending of verbs in *-uir*, but as the *u* and *i* form separate and distinct syllables, it is better to use the accent to indicate this.

1. *Imp. Sub.* arguye—ra, —ras, —ra, arguyéramos, —erais, arguyeran  
 2. *Imp. Sub.* arguye—se, —ses, —se, arguyésemos, —eseis, arguyesen  
*Fut. Sub.* arguye—re, —res, —re, arguyéremos, —ereis, arguyeren  
*Gerund.* arguyendo

## UNCLASSABLE IRREGULAR VERBS

208. A few verbs, while having in some tenses certain irregularities in common, vary in others to such an extent that it becomes impossible to make a logical classification. As the regular endings have been repeated so often, it is not now deemed necessary to give the conjugation of every verb in full.

209. Ando, andar, anduve, andado, *to go, walk.*

*Pres. Ind.* and—o, —as, —a, —amos, —áis, andan

*Pres. Sub.* and—e, —es, —e, —emos, —éis, anden

*Imperat.* and—a, —e, —emos, andad, anden

*Imperf.* and—aba, —abas, —aba, —ábamos, —abais, andaban

*Fut.* andar—é,     *Cond.* andar—ía

*Gerund.* andando

*Pret.* anduve, anduviste, anduvo, —imos, —isteis, anduvie—ron

1. *Imp. Sub.* anduvie—ra, —ras, —ra, —éramos, —erais, anduvieran

2. *Imp. Sub.* anduvie—se, —ses, —se, —ésemos, —eseis, anduviesen

*Fut. Sub.* anduvie—re, —res, —re, —éremos, —ereis, anduvieren

NOTE. — Andar is *to go, to walk*, with no definite aim, and hence would be said of animals and things, but is not confined to them. It is *to go* when the aim or limit is named: —

El barco, mi reloj, el caballo, la     The ship, my watch, the horse,  
 máquina anda bien                     the engine goes well

But —

Yo voy á casa, á palacio, á la     I am going home, to the palace,  
 iglesia, al baile                     to the church, to the ball

210. Doy, dar, dí, dado, *to give.*

*Pres. Ind.* d—oy, das, da, damos, dáis, dan

*Pres. Sub.* d—é, des, dé, demos, déis, den

*Imperat.* da, dé, demos, dad, den

*Imperf.* daba, dabas, daba, etc.

*Fut.* dar-é,      *Cond.* dar-ía

*Gerund.* dando

*Pret.* dí, diste, dió, dimos, disteis, die-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. die-ra, 2. die-se,      *Fut. Sub.* die-re

### Idioms with *dar*

|                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| Doy á usted los buenos días | Good morning to you, <i>or</i> I wish you good day |
| Dar el pésame               | To condole   |
| Dar á luz                   | To publish, bring to light                         |
| El reloj va á dar las cinco | The clock is going to strike five                  |
| Dar con alguno              | To fall in with, to meet anyone                    |
| La ventana da á la calle    | The window opens on the street                     |
| Da cuerda á su reloj        | He winds up his watch                              |
| Vamos á dar un paseo        | Let's take a walk                                  |
| No se me da un higo         | I don't care a fig                                 |
| Á mí me da lo mismo         | It's all the same to me                            |
| El niño dió á reír          | The child began to laugh                           |

### 211. Asgo, asir, así, asido, *to seize.*

*Pres. Ind.* asg-o, ases, ase, asimos, asís, asen

*Pres. Sub.* asg-a, asgas, asga, asgamos, asgáis, asgan

*Imperat.* ase, asga, asgamos, asid, asgan

*Regular.* asía, asir-é, asir-ía, asiendo, así, asiera, asiese, asiere

NOTE. — The irregular forms of *asir* are rarely used.

### 212. Yazco, yazgo, yago, yacer, yací, yacido, *to lie, recline.*

*Pres. Ind.* yazc-o, yazg-o, yag-o, yaces, -e, yacemos, -éis, yacen

*Pres. Sub.* yazc-a, yazg-a, yag-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an

*Imperat.* yace *or* yaz tú, yazc-a, etc., yasc-amos, yaced, yazcan, etc.

*Regular.* yacía, yaceré, yacería, yaciendo, yací, yaciera, yaciese, yaciere

### 213. Caigo, caer, caí, caído, *to fall (understand).*

*Pres. Ind.* caig-o, caes, cae, caemos, caéis, caen

*Pres. Sub.* caig-a, caigas, caiga, caigamos, caigáis, caigan



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



216. Digo, decir, dije, dicho, *to say, tell.*

*Gerund.* diciendo

*Pres. Ind.* dig-o, dices, dice, decimos, decís, dicen

*Pres. Sub.* dig-a, digas, diga, digamos, digáis, digan

*Imperat.* di, diga, digamos, decid, digan

*Imperf.* decía, decías, decía, decíamos, decíais, decían

*Fut.* diré, dirás, dirá, diremos, diréis, dirán

*Cond.* diría, dirías, diría, diríamos, diríais, dirían

*Pret.* dije, dijiste, dijo, dijimos, dijisteis, dije-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. dijera, 2. dijese,      *Fut. Sub.* dijere

NOTE. — An antiquated form *diz* for *dice* still occurs, in familiar style, in the sense of *dícese*, it is said, or *dicen*, they say: *Diz que habrá guerra*, It is said (they say) there will be war.

217. Like *decir* are conjugated all its compounds with a few variations. Among these are: —

1st. That they all have the imperative second person singular *-dice* instead of *-di*.

2d. That *bendecir*, *to bless*, and *maldecir*, *to curse*, have, besides *bendicho* and *maldicho*, the older participles *bendito* and *maldito*; although the latter are only used as adjectives.

3d. That these two, while occasionally occurring with the contracted future of *decir*, now regularly have the future stem *-decir*: —

*Fut.* bendeciré, bendecirás, etc.,      *Cond.* bendecir-ía, -ías, etc.

*Fut.* maldeciré, maldecirás, etc.,      *Cond.* maldecir-ía, -ías, etc.

218. Hago, hacer, hice, hecho, *to do, make.*

*Gerund.* haciendo

*Pres. Ind.* hag-o, haces, hace, hacemos, hacéis, hacen

*Pres. Sub.* hag-a, hagas, haga, hagamos, hagáis, hagan

*Imperat.* haz, haga, hagamos, haced, hagan

*Imperf.* hacía, hacías, hacía, hacíamos, hacíais, hacían

*Fut.* haré, harás, hará, haremos, haréis, harán

*Cond.* haría, harías, haría, haríamos, haríais, harían

*Pret.* hice, -iste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicie-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. hiciera, 2. hiciese, *Fut. Sub.* hiciere

**Idioms.** **Hacer** occurs in numerous idiomatic expressions: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Yo hago hacer un traje nuevo                               | I am having made a new dress                |
| Voy á hacerme la barba                                     | I am going to shave                         |
| Hace las veces del capitán                                 | He is discharging the duties of the captain |
| Ese actor hace el papel de Hámlet                          | That actor plays the part of Hamlet         |
| Ha hecho bancarrota  | He has failed (in business)                 |
| Lo haré venir mañana                                       | I will send for it to-morrow                |
| Hacía de escribano ayer                                    | He was acting as notary yesterday           |
| Hizo gran papel en París                                   | He cut a great figure in Paris              |
| Hacer cara <i>or</i> frente á . . .                        | To face, to resist . . .                    |
| Hacer penitencia con alguno                                | To take pot-luck with anyone                |
| Hicimos vela <i>or</i> nos hicimos á la vela para San Juan | We set sail for San Juan                    |
| Hago por acabarlo  | I am trying to finish it                    |

219. All the compounds of *hacer* are conjugated like it. Some of them appear with the older form *-facer*, but this does not cause them to vary from those in *-hacer*. *Satisfacer*, *to satisfy*, alone has the two imperatives *satisfaz* and *satisface tú*. The Academy condemns the regular forms *satisfaciera*, *satisfaciese*, and *satisfaciere*, which are sometimes found.

220. Salgo, salir, salí, salido, *to go or come out, depart, turn out*.

*Pres. Ind.* salg-o, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen

*Pres. Sub.* salg-a, salgas, salga, salgamos, salgáis, salgan

*Imperat.* sal, salga, salgamos, salid, salgan

*Imperf.* salía, salías, salía, salíamos, salíais, salían

*Fut.* saldr-é, -ás, -á, saldremos, saldréis, saldrán



*Cond.* saldr-ía, -ías, -ía, saldríamos, saldríais, saldrían

*Pret.* salí, saliste, salió, salimos, salisteis, salie-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. saliera, 2. saliese, *Fut. Sub.* saliere

*Gerund.* saliendo

### Idioms with *salir*

|  |   |
|--|---|
| El sol sale                                  | The sun rises   |
| Salga lo que saliere                         | Come out of it what may                                     |
| El caballo me salió en cien pesos            | The horse cost me a hundred dollars                         |
| El libro saldrá á luz el diez del corriente  | The book will be published on the 10th of the current month |
| Ella salía de sí                             | She was in raptures   |
| Ese barril se sale                           | This barrel leaks   |
| Se ha salido con la suya                     | He has carried his point                                    |
| Á causa del arancel salen caros esos géneros | Because of the tariff, those goods come dear                |
| Salir á caballo, en coche                    | To go riding, driving                                       |

### 221. Valgo, valer, valí, valido, *to be worth.*

*Pres. Ind.* valg-o, vales, vale, valemos, valéis, valen

*Pres. Sub.* valg-a, valg-as, valga, valgamos, valgáis, valgan

*Imperat.* val or vale, valga, valgamos, valed, valgan

*Imperf.* valía, valías, valía, valíamos, valíais, valían

*Fut.* valdr-é, -ás, -á, valdremos, valdréis, valdrán

*Cond.* valdr-ía, -ías, -ía, valdríamos, valdríais, valdrían

*Pret.* val-í, -iste, valió, valimos, valisteis, valie-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. valiera, 2. valiese, *Fut. Sub.* valiere

*Gerund.* valiendo

### Idioms with *valer*

|                            |  |
|----------------------------|--|
| Más vale saber que haber   | Wisdom is better than riches               |
| No vale la pena de hacerlo | It is not worth while to do it             |
| No se valdrá de su ventaja | He will not avail himself of his advantage |
| ¡Válgame Dios!             | Good gracious! Gracious me!                |
| Vale lo que pesa           | He is worth his weight (in gold)           |



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

*Imperat.* ven, venga, vengamos, venid, vengan

*Imperf.* ven-ía, -ías, -ía, veníamos, veníais, venían

*Fut.* vendr-é, -ás, -á, vendremos, vendréis, vendrán

*Cond.* vendr-ía, -ías, -ía, vendríamos, vendrías, vendrían

*Pret.* vine, viniste, vino, vinimos, vinisteis, vinie-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. viniera, 2. viniese,      *Fut. Sub.* viniere

*Gerund.* viniendo

NOTE. — All compounds of *venir* have the same irregularities as above.

### Idioms with *venir*

Esa chaqueta no me viene

That jacket does not fit me

Vino á conseguir la plaza

He has obtained the place

Vengo con quien vengo

That's my business and not yours

Venga lo que viniere

Come what may come

Se viene durmiendo

He is falling asleep

224. Tengo, tener, tuve, tenido, *to have, hold.*

The full conjugation is given in 164.

The compounds of *tener* have the same conjugation.

Idioms with *tener* have been given in 166, 2 and only a few others will be set down here: —

Que no tenga V. novedad

I hope you will find things all right at home

Buenos días tenga usted

I wish you good morning

Tenga V. la bondad de decirme . . .

Have the goodness to tell me . . .

Tiene mucho de miserable

He has a good deal of the miser about him

No se podía tener en pie

He could not stand up

225. Quepo, caber, cupe, cabido, *to hold, be contained, get in.*

*Gerund.* cabiendo

*Pres. Ind.* quep-o, cabes, cabe, cabemos, cabéis, caben

*Pres. Sub.* quep-a, quepas, quepa, quepamos, quepáis, quepan

*Imperat.* cabe, quepa, quepamos, cabed, quepan

*Imperf.* cab-ía, -ías, -ía, cabíamos, cabíais, cabían

*Fut.* cabr-é, -ás, -á, cabremos, cabréis, cabrán  
*Cond.* cabr-ía, -ías, -ía, cabríamos, cabríais, cabrían  
*Pret.* cup-e, -iste, cupo, cupimos, cupisteis, cupie-ron  
*Imp. Sub.* 1. cupiera, 2. cupiese, *Fut. Sub.* cupiere

Idioms with *caber*

|   |   |
|---|---|
| No cabe duda  | There is no doubt about it  |
| Si cabe   | If it be possible   |
| ¿Cabe usted?  | Is there room for you?  |
| No cabe más   | That settles it, caps the climax  |
| No cabe en el mundo                                 | The world is not big enough to hold him                                   |
| Cabe suponer se tratará de la guerra y no de la paz | There is room for supposing it will be a question of war and not of peace |
| Todo cabe en fulano                                 | So-and-so is capable of anything  |
| Yo no quepo de gozo                                 | I am overjoyed  |

226. Veo, ver, ví, visto, *to see*.

*Pres. Ind.* ve-o, ves, ve, vemos, véis, ven  
*Pres. Sub.* ve-a, veas, vea, veamos, veáis, vean  
*Imperat.* ve, vea, veamos, ved, vean  
*Imperf.* veía, veías, veía, veíamos, veíais, veían  
*Fut.* veré, verás, verá, veremos, veréis, verán  
*Cond.* vería, verías, vería, veríamos, veríais, verían  
*Pret.* ví, viste, vió, vimos, visteis, vie-ron  
*Imp. Sub.* 1. viera, 2. viesse, *Fut. Sub.* viere  
*Gerund.* viendo

NOTE. — Occasionally in poetry are found the old forms of the imperfect: *via, vias, vía, víamos, víais, vían*, and the populace still use the old preterits *yo vide* for *vi* and *él vido* for *vió*.

227. The compounds of *ver* are inflected like the simple verb. The infinitive was formerly *veer*, and this form appears in some of the compounds. In that case the conjugation is

regular like any other verb in *-eer*, as *leer*, *creer*, *poseer*, in whose conjugation unaccented *i* between two vowels becomes *y*. See 171, *d*.

**Proveo, proveer, proveí, proveído or provisto, to provide.**

*Pres. Ind.* proveo, provees, provee, etc.      *Imperf.* proveía, etc.  
*Pres. Sub.* provea,      *Imperat.* provee, —, —, proveed, —  
*Fut.* proveer-é,      *Cond.* proveer-ía  
*Pret.* prove-í, -íste, proveyó, proveímos, -ísteis, proveye-ron  
*Imp. Sub.* 1. proveyera, 2. proveyese,      *Fut. Sub.* proveyere  
*Gerund.* proveyendo

### Idioms with *ver*

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Eso está de <b>ver</b>              | That is worth seeing  |
| Eso está por <b>ver</b>             | That remains to be seen   |
| Á <b>ver</b> or vamos á <b>ver</b>  | Let's see   |
| Ya se <b>ve</b>                     | It is evident, to be sure   |
| No te <b>verás</b> en ese espejo    | You will not see yourself in that glass, <i>i.e.</i> will not succeed in that way |
| Hágamelo <b>ver</b>                 | Show it to me   |
| Yo le haré <b>ver</b> las estrellas | I will make him see stars   |

**228. Ducir, to lead**, as an independent verb, is no longer in use, but it has several compounds which are conjugated in the present stem according to 171, *a*. In the preterit the stem changes to *duj*.

**Induzco, inducir, induje, inducido, to induce.**

*Gerund.* induciendo

*Pres. Ind.* induzc-o, induces, induce, -imos, -ís, inducen

*Pres. Sub.* induzc-a, -as, -a, induzcamos, -áis, induzcan

*Imperat.* induce, induzca, -amos, inducid, induzcan

*Imperf.* induc-ía, -ías, -ía, inducíamos, -íais, inducían

*Fut.* inducir-é,      *Cond.* inducir-ía

*Pret.* induj-e, -iste, indujo, -imos, -isteis, induje-ron

*Imp. Sub.* 1. indujera, 2. indujese,      *Fut. Sub.* indujere

**NOTE.** — For loss of *i* in preterit stem see 171, *c*.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

|                |                |                 |                |
|----------------|----------------|-----------------|----------------|
| <b>pueda</b>   | <b>sepa</b>    | <b>quiera</b>   | <b>deba</b>    |
| <b>puedas</b>  | <b>sepas</b>   | <b>quieras</b>  | <b>debas</b>   |
| <b>pueda</b>   | <b>sepa</b>    | <b>quiera</b>   | <b>deba</b>    |
| <b>podamos</b> | <b>sepamos</b> | <b>queramos</b> | <b>debamos</b> |
| <b>podáis</b>  | <b>sepáis</b>  | <b>queráis</b>  | <b>debáis</b>  |
| <b>puedan</b>  | <b>sepan</b>   | <b>quieran</b>  | <b>deban</b>   |

## IMPERATIVE

|                |                |                 |                |
|----------------|----------------|-----------------|----------------|
| <b>puede</b>   | <b>sabe</b>    | <b>quiere</b>   | <b>debe</b>    |
| <b>pueda</b>   | <b>sepa</b>    | <b>quiera</b>   | <b>deba</b>    |
| <b>podamos</b> | <b>sepamos</b> | <b>queramos</b> | <b>debamos</b> |
| <b>poded</b>   | <b>sabed</b>   | <b>quered</b>   | <b>debed</b>   |
| <b>puedan</b>  | <b>sepan</b>   | <b>quieran</b>  | <b>deban</b>   |

## IMPERFECT INDICATIVE

**podía, sabía, quería, debía, all regular throughout.**

## FUTURE INDICATIVE

|              |              |               |               |
|--------------|--------------|---------------|---------------|
| <b>podré</b> | <b>sabré</b> | <b>querré</b> | <b>deberé</b> |
|--------------|--------------|---------------|---------------|

## CONDITIONAL

|               |               |                |                |
|---------------|---------------|----------------|----------------|
| <b>podría</b> | <b>sabría</b> | <b>querría</b> | <b>debería</b> |
|---------------|---------------|----------------|----------------|

## PRETERIT

|                   |                   |                    |                   |
|-------------------|-------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| <b>pude</b>       | <b>supe</b>       | <b>quise</b>       | <b>debí</b>       |
| <b>podiste</b>    | <b>supiste</b>    | <b>quisiste</b>    | <b>debiste</b>    |
| <b>pudo</b>       | <b>supo</b>       | <b>quiso</b>       | <b>debió</b>      |
| <b>podimos</b>    | <b>supimos</b>    | <b>quisimos</b>    | <b>debimos</b>    |
| <b>podisteis</b>  | <b>supisteis</b>  | <b>quisisteis</b>  | <b>debisteis</b>  |
| <b>pu-die-ron</b> | <b>su-pie-ron</b> | <b>qui-sie-ron</b> | <b>de-bie-ron</b> |

## 1. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

|                 |                 |                  |                 |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|
| <b>pu-diera</b> | <b>su-piera</b> | <b>qui-siera</b> | <b>de-biera</b> |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|

## 2. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

|                 |                 |                  |                 |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|
| <b>pu-diese</b> | <b>su-piese</b> | <b>qui-siese</b> | <b>de-biese</b> |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|

## FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE

|                 |                 |                  |                 |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|
| <b>pu-diere</b> | <b>su-piere</b> | <b>qui-siere</b> | <b>de-biere</b> |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|

**231. Poder** expresses physical or moral ability, possibility, liability, authority, permission, etc. It is constructed with a dependent infinitive and is variously equivalent to our *may, can, might, could*; but as these may have different shades of meaning, it is best, when there is any doubt, to resolve them into the equivalent forms of the verb *to be able*. The following examples will show some of the many uses of *poder*: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| No puede alcanzarlo                     | He can not (is not able to) reach it                   |
| No pueden menos de sentirlo             | They can not help regretting it                        |
| Mamá, ¿puedo salir á jugar?             | Mama, may I go out to play?                            |
| Me dijo que podía venir                 | He told me he could (was able to) come                 |
| Estaba desalentado; no podía (pudo) más | He was out of breath; he could do no more              |
| Yo había dicho todo lo que había podido | I had said all that I could (had been able to) say     |
| Yo podré hacerlo mañana                 | I can (shall be able to) do it to-morrow               |
| Me aseguró que no podría venir          | He assured me he could not (would not be able to) come |
| Se hubiera podido escapar de la cárcel  | He might have escaped from the prison                  |

**232. Saber** expresses mental ability — *to know how*, as knowledge is power. Hence it may take the place of *poder*, whenever this idea is present. Its use, however, as an auxiliary is not very extensive, and a few examples will suffice: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Tiene ya doce años y no sabe todavía escribir | He is already twelve years old and he can not write yet                 |
| Era muy rico pero no sabía guardar su dinero  | He was very rich, but he did not know how to (could not) keep his money |
| Si se me acomete, yo sabré defenderme         | If I am attacked, I shall be able to defend myself                      |



*a.* As an independent verb **saber** means to have such knowledge as comes from the exercise of the mental faculties — subjective knowledge. Hence: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Yo sé la música, la geografía, la lengua castellana, mi lección, que mi hermano está en Boston, etc. | I know (understand) music, geography, the Spanish language, my lesson, that my brother is in Boston, etc. |
|--|---|

*b.* **Conocer** (see 171, *a*), on the other hand, is to know persons and things by external observation — objective knowledge. Hence: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Yo conozco al capitán, el libro, el camino, la casa del maestro, la cortesía, la buena crianza, etc. | I know the captain, the book, the road, the teacher's house, politeness, good breeding, etc. |
|--|--|

233. **Querer**, with a dependent infinitive, is used instead of the future and conditional forms of the verb, whenever *will* and *would* mean *willingness, wish, inclination*: —

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| ¿Quién quiere prestarme cinco duros? | Who will (is willing to) lend me five dollars?             |
| Le pregunté si quería ir al teatro   | I asked him whether he would (wished to) go to the theater |
| No quiso contestar                   | He would not (was not willing to) answer                   |
| Dijo que no quería venir             | He said he would not (would not be willing to) come        |
| Dudo que quiera aceptarlo            | I doubt whether he will (will be willing to) accept it     |
| Quisiera ir con usted                | I should like to go with you                               |

*a.* **Querer**, when not employed as an auxiliary, means *to love, wish, desire, etc.*: —

|                        |                           |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| Quiero á mis amigos    | I love my friends         |
| ¿Qué más quiere?       | What more does he desire? |
| ¿Qué quiere decir esc? | What does that mean?      |
| Como usted quisiera    | As you will, wish         |



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

236. **Ir á**, with a dependent infinitive, is used to express *intention* or an *immediate future*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Él va á oír misa                       | He is going to hear mass                      |
| Yo voy á partir para Europa esta tarde | I am going to start for Europe this afternoon |

a. Other idioms with **ir**.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Eso es lo que voy diciendo              | That is just what I am saying                   |
| Á despecho de todo iba pidiendo limosna | In spite of everything he went on asking alms   |
| Ella no va á medias                     | She does not do things by halves                |
| Ya se ve que V. no va sobre seguro      | It is evident that you are not on safe ground   |
| Ha ido en busca de su amigo             | He has gone in search of his friend             |
| Vamos á pie, si no hallamos coche       | Let's walk, if we do not find a cartilage       |
| <u>Vaya V. con Dios</u>                 | Farewell (God be with you)                      |
| Mucho va de Pedro á Pedro               | There is a great difference between men and men |
| Por donde fueres, haz como vieres       | If you go to Rome, do as the Romans             |

237. **Acabar**, *to complete, finish*, when followed by **de** and an infinitive, means *to have just done the action expressed by the infinitive*, i.e. it expresses an immediate past: —

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| Acabo de escribir mi tema     | I have just finished writing my composition |
| Acabábamos de comprar la casa | We had just bought the house                |
| Acabó de llegar               | He had just arrived                         |

Note that *acabar de*, with a negative, may have a different meaning: —

|                          |                          |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| No acabo de maravillarme | I can not help wondering |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|

## DEFECTIVE VERBS

238. Ten verbs are defective only in the present stem, as indicated by the dashes below (*a*). The other tenses are complete. The first six are regular; the others are conjugated according to the models of the paragraphs set opposite them.

|                                 |      |                                     |      |
|---------------------------------|------|-------------------------------------|------|
| abolir, <i>abolish</i>          | reg. | manir, <i>make tender</i> (of meat) | reg. |
| desmarrirse, <i>become sad</i>  | “    | aguerrir, <i>accustom to war</i>    | 195  |
| despavorir, <i>be terrified</i> | “    | arrecirse, <i>grow numb</i>         | “    |
| embaír, <i>deceive</i>          |      | aterirse, <i>grow numb</i>          | “    |
| garantir, <i>guarantee</i>      | “    | empedernir, <i>harden</i>           | 202  |

### MODEL

*a.* — **abolir**, **abolí**, **abolido**, *to abolish*.

*Pres. Ind.* —, —, —, **abolimos**, **abolís**, —

*Pres. Sub.* —, —, —, —, —, —

*Imperat.* —, —, —, **abolid**, —

*Imperf.* **abol-ía**, **-ías**, **-ía**, **-íamos**, **-íais**, **-ían**

*Fut.* **abolir-é**, **-ás**, etc.,      *Cond.* **abolir-ía**, **-ías**, etc.

*Pret.* **abol-í**, **-iste**, **-ió**, **-imos**, **-isteis**, **abolie-ron**

*Imp. Sub.* 1. **aboliera** 2. **aboliese**,      *Fut. Sub.* **aboliere**

*Gerund.* **aboliendo**

239. **Raer**, *to erase*, is, for the most part, superseded by other words. When it occurs, it follows the conjugation of *caer* (213), but in addition has 1st per. sing. pres. ind. *rayo* and the present subjunctive: *raya*, *rayas*, *raya*, etc.

240. **Roer**, *to gnaw*, has: —

*Pres. Ind.* **roo**, **roigo**, and **royo**, **roes**, **roe**, etc., regular

*Pres. Sub.* **ro-a**, **roig-a**, and **roy-a**, **-as**, **-a**, etc.

*Imperf.* **roía**, **roías**, **roía**, etc.

*a.* **Corroer**, *to corrode*, has: —

*Pres. Ind.* —, —, **corroe**, —, —, **corroen**

*Pres. Sub.* —, —, **corroa**, —, —, **corroan**

241. The following three verbs occur sporadically in the third persons only: —

a. *Aplacer, to please.*

*Pres. Ind.* —, —, *aplace*, —, —, *aplacen*

*Imperf.* —, —, *aplacía*, —, —, *aplacían*

Note the proverb: *Todo lo nuevo aplace, all novelty is pleasing.*

b. *Atañer, to appertain.*

*Pres. Ind.* —, —, *atañe*, —, —, *atañen*

c. *Concernir, to concern, pp. concernido.*

*Pres. Ind.* *concierne*, *conciernen*,      *Pres. Sub.* *concierna*, *-an*

*Imperf.* *concernía*, *concernían*

*Fut.* *concernirá*, *-án*,      *Cond.* *concerniría*, *-ían*

*Pret.* *concernió*, *concernie-ron*

*Imp. Sub.* 1. *concerniera*, 2. *concerniese*,      *Fut. Sub.* *concerniere*

*Gerund.* *concerniendo*

242. *Soler, to be accustomed*, has the present and imperfect indicative and an occasional compound with the past participle **solido**: —

*Pres. Ind.* *suelo*, *sueles*, *suele*, *solemos*, *soléis*, *suelen*

*Imperf.* *solía*, *solías*, *solía*, *solíamos*, *solíais*, *solían*

REMARK. — There are other verbs which, though having all their forms, are of infrequent use except in the third persons, but they present no peculiarities which require presentation here.

### IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES

243. Four verbs and their compounds have no other irregularities than their past participles: —

*abrir, open, pp. abierto*

*escribir, write, pp. escrito*

*cubrir, cover, pp. cubierto*

*imprimir, print, impress, pp. impreso*



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



5. By *venir á ser, meterse á, llegar á ser, ser*: —

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Vino á ser el valido de la reina      | He became the favorite of the queen           |
| Me dijo que quería meterse á actor    | He told me he wished to become an actor       |
| Dudo que llegue á ser primer ministro | I doubt whether he will become prime minister |
| ¿Qué había sido de él?                | What had become of him?                       |

6. By *quedar*: —

|                              |                                  |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Quedó convencido de su error | He became convinced of his error |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|

NOTE. — There are many other ways of translating *become*, particularly by certain verbs in *-ecer*, as *enfurecerse, to become furious*, *envejecer, to become old*, *envanecerse, to become proud*.

246. *Volver á* (see 192), followed by an infinitive, generally indicates a repetition of the action expressed by the infinitive. It frequently translates our *again* or prefix *re*: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Vuelvo á leer el dictado                   | I read again the dictation                     |
| Volverá á escribir el tema, si se lo mando | He will rewrite the exercise if I order him to |

Other idioms with *volver*.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Su charla me volverá loco               | His babbling will turn me mad                   |
| Déjele V., volverá en sí dentro de poco | Leave him, he will soon come back to his senses |
| La burla se volvió contra él            | His own joke turned against him                 |
| Se me volvió la tortilla                | The tables were turned on me                    |
| El buque se volvió patas arriba         | The ship turned topsy-turvy                     |
| Volveré á casa mañana                   | I shall return home to-morrow                   |

247. *Echar*, besides its common meaning of *to throw*, enters into numerous idioms of daily use: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Al ratero se le echó á puntapiés fuera de la ciudad en vez de echarle á galeras | The thief was kicked out of the town instead of being sent to the galleys |
|---|---|

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>Sería echar agua en el mar</b>                                       | It would be carrying coals to Newcastle  |
| <b>Echar el agua á un niño</b>  | To baptize a child   |
| <b>Echaron la plática á otra parte</b>                                  | They cut short the conversation  |
| <b>Echar el pie adelante ó atrás</b>                                    | To progress or retrograde  |
| <b>Echar raíces, hojas, bigotes, canas, piernas, suertes</b>            | To put forth roots, leaves, to grow a mustache, get gray, strut about, draw lots |
| <b>Entre V. en la alcoba y échele el cerrojo ó la llave á la puerta</b> | Go into the bedroom and bolt or lock the door'                                   |
| <b>Me lo echó en cara</b>   | He reproached me for it  |
| <b>Echo de menos á mi hermano</b>                                       | I miss my brother  |
| <b>El corrector de pruebas no ha echado de ver el error</b>             | The proof-reader did not notice the error  |
| <b>Si te lo dijera, lo echarías á perder</b>                            | If I told it to you, you would spoil it  |
| <b>Echó á reír á carcajadas</b>   | He burst out into a horse-laugh  |
| <b>Derribó al centinela y echó á correr por el patio</b>                | He knocked down the sentinel and began to run across the yard                    |

## LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

**248.** The figures refer to the paragraphs of the grammar and mean that the verbs after which they are placed are conjugated like the ones in the paragraphs indicated.

Inceptive verbs in *-cer* preceded by a vowel are not given in this list, as they all have the same irregularities as shown in **171, a**.

## A

|                                   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| <b>Abrir, 243.</b> open           | <b>Acordar, 188.</b> decide, remind       |
| <b>Absolver, 192.</b> absolve     | <b>Acostar, 188.</b> lay down, put to bed |
| <b>Abstenerse, 164.</b> abstain   | <b>Adestrar, 185.</b> guide               |
| <b>Abstraer, 214.</b> abstract    | <b>Adherir, 195.</b> adhere               |
| <b>Acertar, 185.</b> hit the mark | <b>Adquirir, 197.</b> acquire             |
|                                   | <b>Aducir, 228.</b> adduce                |



Advertir, 195. observe  
 Agorar, 188, *a.* divine  
 Aguerrir, 238. accustom to war  
 Alentar, 185. breathe  
 Almorzar, 171, 4, 188. breakfast  
 Alongar, 188, 171, 2. enlarge  
 Amanecer, 181. dawn  
 Amoblar, 188. furnish  
 Amolar, 188. whet  
 Andar, 209. go  
 Anochecer, 181. become night  
 Antedecir, 217. predict  
 Anteponer, 222. put before  
 Antever, 226. foresee  
 Apacentar, 185. graze  
 Apostar, 188. bet, station  
 Apretar, 185. squeeze  
 Aprobar, 188. approve  
 Argüir, 207. argue  
 Arrecirse, 238. grow numb  
 Arrendar, 185. rent  
 Arrepentirse, 195. repent  
 Ascender, 187. ascend  
 Asentar, 188. set down  
 Asentir, 195. coincide  
 Aserrar, 185. saw  
 Asir, 211. grasp  
 Asoldar, 188. hire  
 Atañer, 241, *b.* appertain  
 Atender, 187. attend to, care for  
 Atenerse, 164. abide by  
 Atentar, 185. attempt a crime  
 Aterirse, 238. grow numb  
 Atraer, 214. attract  
 Atravesar, 185. cross  
 Atribuir, 206. attribute  
 Atronar, 188. thunder, stun

Aventar, 185. winnow  
 Avergonzar, 188, *a.* shame

## B

Bendecir, 217. bless  
 Bienquerer, 230. wish well  
 Bruñir, 171, *c.* burnish  
 Bullir, 171, *c.* boil

## C

Caber, 225. be contained  
 Caer, 213. fall  
 Calentar, 185. warm  
 Cegar, 171, 2, 185. blind  
 Ceñir, 171, *c.*, 202. gird  
 Cerner, 187. sift  
 Cerrar, 185. close  
 Cimentar, 185. found  
 Circuír, 206. surround  
 Cocer, 171, 5 and *a.* boil, bake  
 Colar, 188. strain  
 Colegir, 171, 8, 202. collect  
 Colgar, 171, 2, 188. hang up  
 Comenzar, 171, 4, 185. begin  
 Competir, 202. compete  
 Componer, 222. compose  
 Comprobar, 188. verify  
 Concebir, 202. conceive  
 Concernir, 241, *c.* concern  
 Concertar, 185. concert  
 Concluír, 206. conclude  
 Concordar, 188. agree  
 Condescender, 187. condescend  
 Condolerse, 191. condole  
 Conducir, 228. conduct  
 Conferir, 195. confer



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

- Descordar, 188. unstring  
 Descornar, 188. dishorn  
 Descubrir, 243. discover, uncover  
 Desdecir, 217. charge with falsehood  
 Desdentar, 185. draw teeth  
 Desempedrar, 185. unpave  
 Desencerrar, 185. set at liberty  
 Desencordar, 188. unstring  
 Desengrosar, 188. attenuate  
 Desentenderse, 187. ignore  
 Desenterrar, 185. disinter  
 Desenvolver, 192. unfold  
 Deservir, 202. fail in duty  
 Desgobernar, 185. misgovern  
 Deshacer, 218. undo  
 Deshelar, 181. thaw  
 Desherbar, 185. remove herbs  
 Desherrar, 185. remove horse-shoes  
 Desleír, 203. dilute  
 Deslucir, 171, *a.* tarnish  
 Desmedirse, 202. be unreasonable  
 Desmembrar, 185. dismember  
 Desmentir, 195. give the lie  
 Desnegar, 171, 2, 185. retract  
 Desnevar, 181. thaw  
 Desobstruír, 206. deobstruct  
 Desoír, 215. pretend not to hear  
 Desolar, 188. desolate  
 Desoldar, 188. unsolder  
 Desollar, 188. skin  
 Desosar, 190. bone  
 Desovar, 190. spawn  
 Despedir, 202. dismiss  
 Despedrar, 185. clear of stones  
 Despernar, 185. cripple  
 Despertar, 185. awake  
 Desplacer, 229, NOTE. displease  
 Desplegar, 171, 2, 185. unfold  
 Despoblar, 188. depopulate  
 Desproveer, 227. deprive of provisions  
 Desteñir, 171, *c.*, 202. fade  
 Desterrar, 185. banish  
 Destituír, 206. deprive  
 Destorcer, 171, 5, 191. untwist  
 Destrocar, 171, 1, 188. swap back  
 Destruír, 206. destroy  
 Desventar, 185. ventilate  
 Desvergonzarse, 188, *a.* act impudently  
 Detener, 164. detain  
 Detraer, 214. detract  
 Devolver, 192. return  
 Diferir, 195. differ, defer  
 Digerir, 195. digest  
 Diluír, 206. dilute  
 Discernir, 195. discern  
 Disconvenir, 223. disagree  
 Discordar, 188. disagree  
 Disentir, 195. dissent  
 Disminuír, 206. diminish  
 Disolver, 193. dissolve  
 Disonar, 188. be discordant  
 Disponer, 222. arrange, dispose  
 Distráer, 214. distract  
 Distribuír, 206. distribute  
 Divertir, 195. divert, amuse  
 Doler, 191. ache, pain  
 Dormir, 198. sleep

## E

**Educir, 228.** educe  
**Elegir, 171, 8, 202.** elect  
**Embestir, 202.** attack  
**Emparentar, 185.** be akin by marriage  
**Empedernir, 238.** harden  
**Empedrar, 185.** pave  
**Empezar, 171, 4, 183.** begin  
**Emporcar, 171, 1, 188.** soil, foul  
**Encender, 187.** kindle, light  
**Encerrar, 185.** lock up, inclose  
**Encomendar, 185.** recommend  
**Encontrar, 188.** find, meet  
**Encubertar, 185.** cover over  
**Endentar, 185.** join with a mortise  
**Engreírse, 203.** get proud  
**Engrosar, 188.** fatten  
**Enlucir, 171, a.** whitewash  
**Enmelar, 185.** bedaub with honey  
**Enmendar, 185.** correct  
**Enrodar, 188.** break on the wheel  
**Ensangrentar, 185.** stain with blood  
**Entender, 187.** hear, understand  
**Enterrar, 185.** inter  
**Entredecir, 217.** interdict  
**Entrelucir, 171, a.** glimmer  
**Entremorir, 199.** die away slowly  
**Entreoír, 215.** hear imperfectly  
**Entreponer, 222.** interpose  
**Entretener, 164.** entertain  
**Entrever, 226.** get a glimpse of  
**Envolver, 192.** wrap up, involve  
**Equivaler, 221.** be equal to  
**Erguir, 196.** erect

**Errar, 186.** err, miss  
**Escarmentar, 185.** be warned  
**Escocer, 171, 5 and a.** smart  
**Escribir, 243.** write  
**Esforzar, 171, 4, 188.** strengthen  
**Estar, 164.** be, stand  
**Estreñir, 171, c, 202.** bind  
**Excluír, 206.** exclude  
**Expedir, 202.** dispatch  
**Exponer, 222.** expose  
**Extender, 187.** extend  
**Extraer, 214.** extract

## F

**Ferrar, 185.** plate with iron  
**Fluír, 206.** flow  
**Forzar, 171, 4, 188.** force  
**Freír, 203 and 204.** fry

## G

**Gemir, 202.** groan  
**Gobernar, 185.** govern  
**Gruñir, 171, c.** grunt

## H

**Haber, 164.** have, hold  
**Hacendar, 185.** convey property  
**Hacer, 218.** make, do  
**Heder, 187.** stink  
**Helar, 183.** freeze  
**Henchir, 202.** fill up, stuff  
**Hender, 187.** split  
**Herbecer, 171, a.** begin to grow  
**Herir, 195.** wound  
**Herrar, 185.** shoe horses

Hervir, 195. boil  
 Holgar, 171, 2, 188. rest, idle  
 Hollar, 185. tread  
 Huír, 206. flee

## I

Impedir, 202. impede  
 Imponer, 222. lay, impose  
 Imprimir, 243. print  
 Improbar, 188. censure  
 Incensar, 185. incense  
 Incluír, 206. include  
 Indisponer, 222. indispose  
 Inducir, 228. induce  
 Inferir, 195. infer  
 Infernar, 185. damn  
 Influir, 206. influence  
 Ingerir, 195. insert, graft  
 Inquirir, 197. inquire  
 Instituir, 206. institute  
 Instruir, 206. instruct  
 Interdecir, 216. interdict  
 Interponer, 222. interpose  
 Intervenir, 223. intervene  
 Introducir, 228. introduce  
 Invernar, 185. winter  
 Invertir, 195. invert, invest  
 Investir, 202. invest  
 Ir, 235. go

## J

Jugar, 189. play, stake

## L

Leer, 227. read  
 Lucir, 171, *a.* shine

## Ll

Llover, 181. rain

## M

Maldecir, 217. curse  
 Malherir, 195. wound badly  
 Malquerer, 230. abhor  
 Maltraer, 214. maltreat  
 Manifestar, 185. manifest  
 Mantener, 164. maintain, keep  
 Mecer, 171, 5 and *a.* rock, shake  
 Medir, 202. measure  
 Melar, 185. deposit honey  
 Mentar, 185. mention  
 Mentir, 195. tell falsehoods  
 Merendar, 185. lunch  
 Moblar, 188. furnish  
 Moler, 191. grind  
 Morder, 191. bite  
 Morir, 199. die  
 Mostrar, 188. show  
 Mover, 191. move

## N

Negar, 171, 2, 185. deny  
 Nevar, 181. snow

## O

Obstruir, 206. obstruct  
 Obtener, 164. obtain  
 Oír, 215. hear  
 Oler, 193. smell  
 Oponer, 222. oppose



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



- Rehumedecer, 171, *a.* redampen  
 Reír, 203, *a.* laugh  
 Relucir, 171, *a.* glitter  
 Remendar, 185. mend  
 Rementir, 195. lie frequently  
 Remoler, 195. regrind  
 Remorder, 191. bite repeatedly  
 Remover, 191. remove  
 Rendir, 202. subdue, surrender  
 Renegar, 171, 2, 185. deny  
 Renovar, 188. renew  
 Reñir, 171, *c.*, 202. quarrel  
 Repensar, 185. consider, reflect  
 Repetir, 202. repeat  
 Replegar, 171, 2, 185. redouble  
 Repoblar, 188. repeople  
 Reponer, 222. replace, reply  
 Reprobar, 188. condemn  
 Reproducir, 228. reproduce  
 Requebrar, 185. woo, court  
 Requerer, 230. desire anxiously  
 Requerir, 195. require  
 Resaber, 230. know well  
 Resalir, 220. jut out  
 Resegar, 171, 2, 185. reap again  
 Resembrar, 185. resow  
 Resentirse, 195. begin to fail  
 Resolver, 192. resolve  
 Resollar, 188. respire  
 Resonar, 188. resound  
 Restituír, 206. restore  
 Restregar, 171, 2, 185. scrub  
 Retemblar, 185. tremble often  
 Retener, 164. retain  
 Reteñir, 171, *c.*, 202. dye again  
 Retorcer, 171, 5, 191. twist  
 Retostar, 188. toast again  
 Retraer, 214. retract  
 Retribuír, 206. recompense  
 Retronar, 181. thunder again  
 Reventar, 185. burst  
 Revestir, 202. put on clerical robes  
 Revolar, 188. fly again  
 Revolcarse, 171, 1, 188. wallow  
 Revolver, 192. stir, revolve  
 Rodar, 188. roll  
 Roer, 240. gnaw  
 Rogar, 171, 2, 188. ask, beg
- S
- Saber, 230. know  
 Salir, 220. go or come out  
 Satisfacer, 219. satisfy  
 Segar, 171, 2, 185. reap  
 Seguir, 171, 10, 202. follow, continue  
 Sembrar, 185. sow  
 Sementar, 185. sow  
 Sentar, 185. seat  
 Sentir, 195. feel, regret  
 Ser, 164. be  
 Serrar, 185. saw  
 Servir, 202. serve  
 Sobrentender, 187. be understood  
 Sobreponer, 222. add  
 Sobresalir, 220. surpass  
 Sobresembrar, 185. sow over again  
 Sobresolar, 188. pave anew  
 Sobrevenir, 223. happen  
 Sobreventar, 185. gain the weather gage

Sobrevestir, 202. put on over-coat  
 Sofreír, 203, 204. fry slightly  
 Soldar, 188. solder  
 Soler, 242. be accustomed  
 Soltar, 188. loosen  
 Solver, 192. loosen  
 Sollar, 188. blow with bellows  
 Sonar, 188. sound  
 Sonreír, 203, *a.* smile  
 Soñar, 188. dream  
 Sosegar, 171, 2, 185. appease  
 Sostener, 164. sustain  
 Subarrendar, 185. subrent  
 Subseguir, 171, 10, 202. follow next

Substituír, 206. substitute  
 Substraer, 214. subtract  
 Subtender, 187. subtend  
 Subvenir, 223. aid  
 Sugerir, 195. suggest  
 Superponer, 222. superpose  
 Supervenir, 223. supervene  
 Suponer, 222. suppose  
 Sustituír, 206. substitute  
 Sustraer, 214. subtract

## T

Temblar, 185. tremble  
 Tender, 187. stretch  
 Tener, 164. have, hold  
 Tentar, 185. touch, try  
 Teñir, 171, *c.*, 202. dye, tinge  
 Torcer, 171, 5, 191. twist  
 Tostar, 188. toast  
 Traducir, 228. translate

Traer, 214. bring  
 Transcender, 187. transcend  
 Trascolar, 188. percolate  
 Trascordarse, 188. forget  
 Trasegar, 171, 2, 185. overset  
 Traslucir, 171, *a.* shine through  
 Trasoír, 215. misunderstand  
 Trasoñar, 188. dream  
 Trasponer, 222. transpose  
 Trostrocar, 171, 1, 188. invert  
 Trasvolar, 188. fly across  
 Travesar, 185. cross  
 Trocar, 171, 1, 188. exchange  
 Tronar, 181. thunder  
 Tropezar, 171, 4, 185. stumble

## V

Valer, 221. be worth  
 Venir, 223. come  
 Ventar, 185. blow (*wind*)  
 Ver, 226. see  
 Verter, 187. spill  
 Vestir, 202. clothe  
 Volar, 188. fly, blow up  
 Volcar, 171, 1, 188. overset, hurl  
 Volver, 192, 246. come back, return

## Y

Yacer, 212. lie, recline  
 Yuxtaponer, 222. put along side

## Z

Zabullirse, 171, *c.* dive, plunge  
 Zaherir, 195. mortify



## XXIX

## SYNTAX

## Definite Article

249. While the Spanish definite article has some uses in common with the English it differs for the most part radically. Some of its uses are: —

*a.* With the names of countries, provinces, mountains and cities; also familiarly before the baptismal names of women: —

el Brasil, la Coruña

la América del Sur

la Habana, el Vesuvio

la Carlota, la Dolores

*b.* In periods or points of time: —

Le veré el lunes de la semana entrante

I shall see him Monday of next week

Es la una; son las dos, las tres

It is one, two, three o'clock

*c.* In expressing rate, measure, weight, etc.: —

Al tanto por ciento

At so much per cent

Á dos duros la fanega

At two dollars a bushel

NOTE. — But the article may be omitted and *por* used: —

Dos pesos vara (*or la v. or por v.*) Two dollars a yard

*d.* When the noun expresses a universal or abstract idea: —

El mentir es un gran vicio

Lying is a great vice

El oro es más precioso que la plata

Gold is more precious than silver

*e.* Before titles in the third person, except *don* and *doña*: —

El doctor Sánchez; el general Espartero

Dr. Sanchez; General Espartero

Don Juan y doña María han llegado

Don John and Miss Mary have arrived

But —

Buenos días, señor García

Good day, Mr. García



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

los martes y los jueves. 4. La ví (226)\* el lunes y la veré el miércoles. 5. Dice (216) que descontará el pagaré al cinco por ciento. 6. Vendió su trigo á un duro la fanega (f. *or* por f.). 7. El perro es el más fiel de los animales domésticos. 8. El hombre propone y la mujer dispone. 9. El general Espartero nació en 1792 y murió (199) en 1879. 10. Mi amigo, don Juan, cayó (213) ayer al agua (12, NOTE). 11. Buenas tardes, señorita Angélica; estoy (164) ahora á su servicio. 12. Siendo sobrino del gobernador se arrogaba ciertos privilegios especiales. 13. Carlos segundo, hijo de Felipe cuarto, murió (199) á los treinta y nueve (51) años de su edad.

14. France, whose capital is Paris, produces much wine. 15. Great Britain made (218) a treaty with Japan some (120) years ago. 16. I will sell you (58) this cloth at two dollars a yard. 17. Iron and steel are very useful<sup>2</sup> metals<sup>1</sup>. 18. Professor Altamira is writing (163, *a*) an excellent history of Spain. 19. It seems to be the magic work of a fairy. 20. Maria Cristina, formerly queen regent, is the mother of the present<sup>2</sup> king<sup>1</sup> of Spain. 21. It is eleven (51) o'clock, and I am going (235) to (*a*) make the bed. 22. The question of the free coinage of silver does not interest us (58) in these (80) days. 23. He wrote in the style of Castelar. 24. What-happened this (80) morning surprises me (60).

### XXX

#### Indefinite Article

254. The Spanish **indefinite article** differs widely from the English by its more frequent omission. This occurs: —

*a.* Before nouns used predicatively: —

Es abogado; es médico

He is a lawyer; he is a physician

Es excelente compositor

He is an excellent composer

\* The irregular verbs will be studied partly by reference to the sections where they are conjugated. The student should be required to recite the whole tense whenever they occur in the exercises.

Note, however, that when the noun is modified, the article may be used to define more sharply the individual: —

Será un hombre de importancia      He will be a man of mark

*b.* Before nouns in apposition: —

*El Sombrero de tres Picos*, novela de Alarcón, ha sido traducido al inglés      *The Three-cornered Hat*, a novel by Alarcon, has been translated into English

*c.* Before certain common and indefinite adjectives: —

Buen susto me has dado      You have given me a good scare  
 Está en muy mal estado      It is in a very bad state  
 En semejante materia      In such a matter  
 Tamaña idea no me ocurrió      Such an idea did not occur to me

*d.* After negatives and words implying negation: —

Por no sufrir extraño yugo      Not to suffer a foreign yoke  
 Siguió sin pronunciar palabra      He followed without speaking a word

*e.* Before quantitative words: —

Precio, diez pesetas año      Price, ten *pesetas* a year  
 No hay vara y media      There is not a yard and a half  
 Á media milla de aquí      At half a mile from here

*f.* Before nouns used in a rather general or indefinite sense: —

Después de brevísima noche      After a very short night  
 Dió palabra de curarme      He promised to cure me  
 Le dió habitación en palacio      He gave him a room in the palace

**255.** Learn the whole conjugation of *estar*, 164.

**256.**

### Ejercicio Veintidós

1. Aquel (80) tipo nos parece modelo de ingratitud. 2. Mi (65) sobrina quiso (230) meterse á (245, 5) hermana de caridad. 3. Emilio Castelar llegó á ser (245, 5) un estadista de primer (27) orden. 4. Un anciano de muy pequeña estatura estuvo en la puerta. 5. Nueva York, gran ciudad de los Estados Unidos,

- está en la desembocadura del Hudson. 6. Estaba en el puente cuando el barco recibió gran quebranto. 7. Antes que venga (223) el tren, estaré en otro lugar. 8. Tal cosa no sería posible en este país. 9. Por igual razón dudo del éxito de la impresa. 10. El capitán siguió el camino sin hablar palabra. 11. *La Historia general* de la Fuente me (58) costó treinta (51) pesetas tomo. 12. Datos tomados de fuente fidedigna no prueban lo que dice (216). 13. También teníamos sala de patinar en el piso inferior.
14. Mr. (249, e) Altamira is a professor in the university of Oviedo. 15. He had been a surveyor in the German<sup>2</sup> army<sup>1</sup>. 16. He does not have (14, a) good health, but if he lives, he will become (245, 4) a famous actor. 17. *Pepita Jiménez*, a novel of Juan Valera, had (164) a great success. 18. Such a noble action will ever<sup>2</sup> merit<sup>1</sup> our (65) admiration. 19. I wish (230) to buy a dozen and a half (254, e) of oranges. 20. What a shame! what a pity (10)! he has a wife and children, and they have nothing to eat (166, NOTE). 21. He answered me with a certain malicious<sup>2</sup> tone<sup>1</sup>, which (89) I shall not forget easily.
22. A thousand soldiers will not suffice to (*para*) take the fort. 23. This newspaper costs five dollars a year in Spain. 24. Later the then senator formed a part of the first ministry. 25. I attribute it to a lack of moral<sup>2</sup> and physical<sup>3</sup> strength<sup>1</sup>.

## XXXI

257. Review all the verbs of 164 and study carefully sections 165 to 168 inclusive.

## 258. Ejercicio Veintitrés

1. Hemos de salir esta mañana para Valladolid. 2. Sí, los dos (139, 4) estuvieron aquí no ha mucho tiempo. 3. Habría que tener presente lo dudoso de la empresa. 4. Había miles (52, c) de personas en el camino yendo (235) á Santiago de Compostela, célebre santuario. 5. Hay docena y media de



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



**260.** The **nominative** has the same uses as the English nominative.

**261.** The **genitive** is formed by **de**, *of*, and is the equivalent of the English possessive or of a word preceded by *of* (sometimes *to*): —

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| El caballo <b>de</b> mi amigo                     | My friend's horse              |
| Una taza <b>de</b> te; una copa <b>de</b><br>agua | A cup of tea; a glass of water |
| Una cadena <b>de</b> oro                          | A gold chain                   |
| El camino <b>de</b> la viña                       | The road to the vineyard       |

*a.* The **genitive** occurs also after certain reflexive and quasi-intransitive verbs, where the English verb usually takes the direct object: —

|                                     |                               |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Los soldados carecen <b>de</b> todo | The soldiers lack everything  |
| Voy <b>á</b> cambiar de traje       | I am going to change clothing |
| No me fío <b>de</b> sus promesas    | I don't trust his promises    |

**262.** The **dative**, expressed by **á** when a noun or pronoun follows, is the case of the indirect object and is usually rendered into English by *to* (sometimes *of* or *from*): —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| El general habló <b>al</b> soldado      | The general spoke <b>to</b> the soldier       |
| <b>Á</b> mí me lo dijo y no <b>á</b> él | He told it <b>to</b> me and not <b>to</b> him |
| Me pidió una limosna                    | He asked alms <b>of</b> me                    |
| Le ganó todo su dinero                  | He won <b>from</b> him all his money          |

*a.* The **dative** occurs also after some nouns: —

|                               |                     |
|-------------------------------|---------------------|
| El amor <b>á</b> la patria    | The love of country |
| Su afición <b>á</b> la música | His love for music  |
| El miedo <b>á</b> la muerte   | The fear of death   |

*b.* The following examples show an echo of the Latin ethical dative or dative of advantage or disadvantage: —

|                               |                             |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Me lo bebí todo               | I drank it all (for myself) |
| Me hallé una buena colocación | I found me a good situation |

**263. The personal accusative formed by the preposition á is used —**

*a.* When the object of the verb is a pronoun or common noun representing definite living beings or things personified: —

Los buenos padres quieren á sus hijos      Good parents love their children

El cazador vapula al perro      The hunter flogs the dog

El buen ciudadano ama á su patria      The good citizen loves his country

De los dos hombres prefiero á éste      Of the two men I prefer this one

*b.* When the object is a proper name without the article: —

Mandé á José al correo      I sent Joseph to the post office

*c.* When two objects stand in a factive relation to each other, the true accusative takes *á*: —

El rey designó capitán al teniente      The king appointed the lieutenant captain

Hizo al agua vino      He made the water wine

*d.* Á must be used for clearness whenever the subject may be taken for the object and *vice versa*: —

Sigue el día á la noche      The day follows the night

Al perro mata el puerco      The hog kills the dog

**264. The simple accusative, *i.e.* without á, is used —**

*a.* When the object is a thing or insignificant animal: —

Escribe una carta á su padre      He writes a letter to his father

El muchacho mata la liebre      The boy kills the hare

*b.* When the object is not preceded by a determining word, as the article, demonstrative, etc.: —

No conozco hombre más torpe      I don't know a duller man

But —

No conozco á este hombre      I do not know this man

*c.* When the object stands in immediate relation with a dative, unless the former be a proper name without the article: —



Envié el criado á la plaza I sent the servant to market

But —

Pascual entrega á María á su rival Pascual delivers up Mary to his rival

*d.* When the object is a proper name preceded by the article: —

Pizarro conquistó el Perú Pizarro conquered Peru

Prefiero el Dante al Tasso I prefer Dante to Tasso

*e.* When the object represents a general idea: —

Toda buena mujer ama los buenos Every good woman loves good niños children

But —

Una buena mujer quiere á sus hijos A good woman loves her children

*f.* Sometimes the omission or use of á gives a different turn to the thought: —

Dejo el criado en la casa Dejo al criado hacerlo

*I leave the servant in the house I have the servant do it*

Perdió ayer su padre Ha perdido á su hijo

*He lost his father yesterday He has spoiled his son*

**265.** Review and learn all of the first conjugation, 170.

**266.** Ejercicio Veinticuatro

1. Los manzanos del huerto producen excelentes manzanas un año sí y otro no. 2. Llegando frente á la aduana el barco varió de rumbo. 3. Quien depende de la caridad de sus parientes debiera (234) usar de sus privilegios y no abusar de ellos. 4. El salteador de camino saliendo del bosque quitó al viajero su reloj y su dinero. 5. Prometió á la muchachita que la daría un terrón de azúcar. 6. Lo mandaré á casa por usted, si le gusta. 7. Ganaba su vida pidiendo limosna. 8. «Entrad por la puerta estrecha; porque ancha es la puerta y espacioso el camino que lleva á perdición.» 9. «Beso á usted la mano, caballero,»



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

## XXXIII

## SYNTAX OF THE VERB\*

**267. Word order.** The position of the words in a Spanish sentence depends largely on the choice of the speaker, who arranges them to suit his own notions of emphasis, rhythm, and harmony. Take the sentence —

La mayor parte del público rió á  
mandíbula batiente

The greater part of the public  
laughed uproariously

*adv.*

*U.S.*

These words may be arranged in two other ways: Rió á mandíbula batiente la mayor parte del público, *or* Á mandíbula batiente rió la mayor parte del público. The only requisite is that the syntactical relation of the words be clear.

**268. The agreement of subject and predicate in Spanish differs but slightly from the English usage: —**

*a.* A noun of multitude, not modified by a plural adjunct, takes its verb in the singular or plural, according as the idea of unity or plurality predominates in the speaker's mind: —

|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| Toda la gente aplaudió                  | All the people applauded              |
| Multitud de gente acudieron á la ciudad | A crowd of people hurried to the city |

*b.* A noun of multitude, limited by a plural adjunct, takes its verb in the singular or plural, but in the plural only when it is logically applicable to the individuals of the adjunct: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Un batallón de soldados defienden<br>( <i>or</i> defiende) el castillo | A battalion of soldiers defends<br>the castle |
|--|---|

\* The syntax of the adjective has been treated in sections 31 to 34, *d.* and it would be well to review it at this point.

**NOTE.** — When the verb precedes the subject or is not logically applicable to the adjunct, it is usually singular in the former case, while in the latter it must be: —

**Sale** de la trinchera un destacamento de trabajadores      A detachment of laborers came out of the intrenchment

But —

**Está** subido el precio de las manzanas      The price of apples is high

**269.** When two or more singular subjects are considered as distinct agencies, and especially if the verb follows, the verb will be plural: —

**El jinete y el caballo cayeron**      The rider and horse fell

**El sol y la luna alumbran la tierra**      The sun and the moon give light to the earth

*a.* But if the verb precedes, or the subjects are taken as forming one idea, the verb will generally be in the singular: —

**Comenzó á caer al mismo tiempo una lluvia y nieve**      A rain and snow began to fall at the same time

**El subir y bajar la escalera me cansa**      Going up and coming down the stairs tire me

**NOTE.** — When the ideas are distinct, some determining word will usually precede them: —

**Su voz y su pronunciación son incantadoras**      Both her voice and pronunciation are charming

**270.** Two or more subjects connected by **ni** will take the verb in the singular or plural according as it logically refers to one or all of them: —

**Ni él ni su hijo irá de cónsul á Cartagena**      Neither he nor his son will go as consul to Cartagena

**Ni el capitán ni el general pudieron refrenar los sediciosos**      Neither the captain nor the general could restrain the mutineers

a. Where *o* serves as a connective between subjects, as it implies an alternative, the verb will usually be singular: —

*Ó su amigo ó él me ha engañado*      Either his friend or he has deceived me

271. Where a sentence contains a relative clause, the verb of the latter will vary in person according to the syntactical structure of the sentence: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>Yo, que lo digo, lo probaré</i>           | I, who say it, will prove it                  |
| <i>He sido la que se lo dije (or dijo)</i>   | It was I who said it to him                   |
| <i>¿Sois los que me lo pedís?</i>            | Is it you who ask it of me?                   |
| <i>Soy yo quien va (or voy) á contártelo</i> | I am the one who is going to relate it to you |

272. Review and learn all the second conjugation, 170.

### 273.                      Ejercicio Veinticinco

1. La multitud quedó atónita, cuando oyó (215) el discurso elocuente del joven. 2. La mitad del regimiento resultaron muertos en la batalla campal. 3. Un enjambre de abejas con su maestra salieron (or salió) de su colmena. 4. Vino (223) una lluvia de cenizas y destruyó toda la ciudad. 5. Conmovieron mucho al público el monólogo del barítono y el dúo con la tiple. 6. Al empuñar el maestro la batuta, reinaba en el teatro un silencio profundo y una emoción intensa. 7. La salida y la puesta del sol marcan el principio y el fin del día. 8. Ni el (12, NOTE) ala derecha ni el centro pudieron (230) hacer frente al enemigo. 9. Ó el amo ó el criado compró el barómetro que hallamos en la tienda. 10. Ni el uno ni el otro se casó con ella. 11. Su único recurso son los tribunales de los Estados Unidos. 12. Lo dijeron (216) á él quien no es su amigo. 13. Nosotros, que ya no somos jóvenes, merecemos mejor (41) tratamiento. 14. Somos nosotros quienes lo mantendremos á pesar de todo.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



*a.* To express habitual or repeated action, sometimes rendered in English by *used to*; also state or condition: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Entonces era yo joven y me deleitaba mucho | Then I was young and used to enjoy myself much |
| Estaba malo y no podía salir               | He was sick and could not go out               |

*b.* To indicate that one action was taking place, when another supervened: —

|                                |                                       |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Llegó la carta cuando yo comía | The letter arrived while I was dining |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------------|

See also 168.

*c.* To express simultaneous actions: —

|   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| Mientras yo escribía (estaba escribiendo), él leía (estaba leyendo) | While I was writing, he was reading |
|---|-------------------------------------|

*d.* In descriptive narrative: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ya era noche, y la oscuridad, con cada momento, íbase poniendo más profunda. Cuanto más buscábamos, más nos perdíamos | It was already night, and the darkness, at every moment, was getting deeper. The more we sought (our way), the more we became bewildered |
|---|--|

*e.* When the action took place at a time specified in the sentence: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Se hizo á la vela y al día siguiente arribaba á Cádiz | He set sail and on the following day arrived at Cadiz |
|---|---|

*f.* With the force of the pluperfect: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Hacía muchos años que vivíamos en Sevilla | It had been many years that he had been living in Seville |
|---|---|

*g.* As a substitute for the conditional: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Á no ser por el temporal, mañana se concluía la obra | But for the storm, the work would be concluded to-morrow |
|--|--|

**276.** Review and learn all the third conjugation, 170.

277.

## Ejercicio Veintiseis

1. Está empleado en el correo desde que vino (223) aquí.
2. Venía á verme (59, a) muy á menudo cuando yo veraneaba á orillas de la mar.
3. Yo comí mi merienda mientras él escribía su carta.
4. Iba (235) á la pesca con mi padre cuando era muchacho.
5. Si venían á vernos, salíamos á paseo.
6. Cuando amenazaba lluvia, llevaba su paraguas ó un impermeable.
7. (275, d) Carlos y Juan se batían á espadas. Éste (82) se abalanzaba, pensando hender la cabeza á aquél. El primero paró el golpe, lo que hizo (218) resbalar á su contrincante; y como un rayo la espada de Carlos le atravesaba el corazón.
8. Dice (216) la Santa Biblia que había (165, b, 3) gigantes en la tierra en los días antes del diluvio.
9. (275, g) Si yo anduviera (209) en vapor, no llegaba á tiempo que pasaba el tren.
10. El imperfecto indica también lo que era posible en lo pasado; por ejemplo: Ayer todo el mundo se fiaba de mi firma. Yo tomaba (*could take*) un pedacito de papel, escribía en él mi nombre, y valía (*would be worth*) cien mil duros.
11. He comprado esta (80) mañana lo que quería comprar ayer por la tarde.
12. Sócrates era un ilustre filósofo griego que fué (164) condenado á beber la cicuta y murió (199) heroicamente.
13. When I lived in Boston, I used to go (235) to the public<sup>2</sup> schools<sup>1</sup>.
14. If I went out to walk (277, 5) my brother accompanied<sup>2</sup> me<sup>1</sup>.
15. They feared my wrath more than his (74).
16. While we were standing on the corner, the carriage passed by at full speed.
17. When it rained, they stayed at home and read.
18. (275, d) Already the day was breaking (181); little by little the stars were disappearing from the sky; the birds were beginning to (á) sing, and all nature was about (167, a) to awaken from its slumber.
19. We set out from Cádiz and on [the] tenth (53, a) of March we arrived at Cartagena.
20. (277, 10) When I was younger (41, a) I was more robust. I could rise early, work hard all (the) day, spend many hours dancing and amusing myself in other ways; and in spite of all<sup>1</sup>



I was never<sup>2</sup> tired. 21. We had been living in the same village and in the same house forty years and we [did] not wish to change [our] residence. 22. If we went (235) by the trolley we should arrive at noon. 23. We have accomplished all that we wished to accomplish, and consequently we are satisfied. 24. All those who desired to accompany the fleet applied at the office to (*para*) obtain permission.

## XXXV

## TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE CONTINUED

278. The **preterit** states what took place at some point or period in the past separated from the present. The interval, whether a minute or centuries, must always be expressed or implied.

|                |  |                     |  |
|----------------|--|---------------------|--|
| ¿Cuándo llegó? | Llegó hoy, esta mañana, hace algunos minutos | When did he arrive? | He arrived to-day, this morning, a few minutes ago |
|----------------|--|---------------------|--|

REMARK. — What was formerly the old pluperfect (now the imperfect subjunctive) is sometimes used instead of the preterit: —

|                          |                |                                     |
|--------------------------|----------------|-------------------------------------|
| No ambicionara           | Luzbel á estar | Lucifer never desired to be farther |
| más lejos de Dios que él |                | from God than he                    |

279. The **perfect** has but three well-recognized uses: —

1. To express what occurred at some indefinite period in the past: —

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| ¿Ha leído V. los poemas de Bécquer? | Have you read the poems of                 |
| Sí, los leí veinte años ha          | Becker? Yes, I read them twenty years ago. |

2. To indicate an action begun in the past and continued in the present: —

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Hemos vivido en esta casa quince años | We have been living in this house fifteen years |
|---------------------------------------|---|



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

juvenil locura desde mucho tiempo. 8. Hoy se han portado mucho mejor que ayer. 9. Los que hemos vivido en este país hemos venido á ser más felices. 10. La lluvia y la nieve han sido disipadas por el calor del sol. 11. La ciudad había sido atacada por el enemigo antes de la caída de la noche. 12. Luego que nuestras lecciones hubieron sido dadas, íbamos (235) á pasear. 13. Así que hubo sido tomada la palabra, reinó un silencio profundo. 14. Apenas hubieron sido acabadas nuestras tareas que salimos á pasear en coche. 15. Luego que se hubo portado más cortésmente, le permitimos á salir á jugar.

16. He came (223) to this country ten<sup>2</sup> years<sup>3</sup> ago<sup>1</sup>. 17. God created the heavens and the earth in six days (283, 4) according to the Bible. 18. I was loved by my sister more than by my brother. 19. He behaved himself well and received a reward. 20. We have forgotten (179) the name of the book. 21. Have you lost the pencils which I gave you? — Yes, I lost them yesterday. 22. How long has he been in Europe? — Some (*unos*) twenty years I believe. 23. This winter there has been (165, *b*, 3) much rain and snow. 24. Has she behaved herself to-day as well as [she did] yesterday? — I believe so. 25. They have been loved more than feared. 26. We had finished our task, when they arrived. 27. After we had recited our lessons, we used to go (235) driving in the park. 28. He had flattered himself that he would receive more consideration from them (*ellos*). 29. She had been esteemed for (*por*) her [good] qualities. 30. Those (*los*) who had been so fortunate the first time (*vez*, *f.*), staked all they had the second time and lost it (*lo*). 31. We had been occupied the whole day and at nightfall (283, 11) were very tired. 32. They had praised themselves so much that they disgusted us. 33. Hardly had they reached the valley when (*que*) the enemy opened (the) fire. 34. No sooner had we sallied forth from the intrenchments than we were surrounded and captured. 35. When he had been forced to (*á*) recognize our claim, he resolved to (*á*) pay it. 36. Horses are sold at very low prices.

## XXXVI

## TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE CONTINUED. — IMPERATIVE

284. The future, besides expressing future time, has the following idiomatic use: —

|                            |                           |
|----------------------------|---------------------------|
| ¿Qué <b>hará</b> él ahora? | What can he be doing now? |
| ¿Qué horas <b>serán</b> ?  | About what time is it?    |

285. The future perfect, as its name implies, expresses an action as completed in the future before some other action or point of time: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| El barco <b>habrá salido</b> del puerto á las ocho | The vessel will have gone out of the port by eight o'clock |
|--|--|

a. Idiomatically as in 284: —

|                                |                       |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------|
| ¿Quién lo <b>habrá hecho</b> ? | Who can have done it? |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------|

286. The conditional is used —

a. To express a future regarded from the standpoint of the past: —

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| Me dijo que <b>vendría</b> esta mañana | He told me he would come this morning |
|--|---------------------------------------|

b. To express a conclusion dependent on a condition stated or implied: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Si estuviera ( <i>or</i> estuviese) V. malo, no <b>podría</b> venir | If you were sick, you would not be able to come |
|---|---|

c. Idiomatically after the manner of the future: —

|                                  |                                    |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <b>Sería</b> á eso de las cuatro | It was probably about four o'clock |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------------|

287. The conditional perfect bears about the same relation to the conditional as the future perfect does to the future (284, 285): —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| a. Estaba seguro de que él <b>habría</b> aceptado mi oferta | I was sure he would have accepted my offer |
|---|--|

- b.* Por eso no habría hecho tal cosa For that (reason) I would not have done such a thing
- c.* Algún enemigo le habría acechado Some enemy must have waylaid him

**288.** The **imperative** and **subjunctive** overlap each other, in some respects, both as to form and use. In the third person *que* sometimes introduces the sentence: —

|                               |                             |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <b>Ama</b> á tus padres       | Love thy parents            |
| <b>Váyase</b> V., si gusta    | Go away, if you please      |
| <b>¡Qué no entre</b> aquí!    | Let him not come in here!   |
| <b>Vivamos</b> como es debido | Let us live as is befitting |
| <b>Haced</b> lo que queráis   | Do whatever you will        |

*a.* When the second person singular and plural are negatived, the corresponding forms of the subjunctive must be used: —

|                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <b>No vayas</b> más adelante      | Don't go any farther             |
| <b>No temáis</b> que yo lo impida | Don't fear that I will hinder it |

**289.** Review the verbs of the last lesson and learn in addition sections 179 to 181, *b*, inclusive.

### **290. Ejercicio Veintiocho**

1. Creo que no habrá (165, 3) hombre más arrogante que él.
2. Dice (216) mi hermano que ella tendrá unos quince años.
3. Sin duda será amada de todos por sus cualidades.
4. Partiendo de aquí á las once habrá llegado á las cinco.
5. Ya habrá recibido su correo.
6. Si vivimos hasta entonces, habremos vivido nuestros setenta años.
7. ¿Quién se habrá portado de tal manera?
8. Serán castigados por sus delitos.
9. Los novios se amarán el uno á la otra.
10. Cuando llueve después de una sequedad, dicen los campesinos que millones caen del cielo.
11. Nos prometió que lo haría (218) en seguida.
12. Si lo hacíamos, seríamos temidos más que estimados.
13. Á no ser por su cortedad, deberían felicitarse los unos á los otros.
14. Serían las diez de la mañana cuando nos perdimos en el



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



is one of *uncertainty, doubt, wish, expectation*, or some *mental or moral emotion*. The English having lost most of its subjunctive forms, the Spanish has often to be rendered by the English indicative, infinitive, or other verbal forms. When occurring in a dependent clause, this clause is introduced by some conjunction, generally *que*. When the subjects of both clauses are the same, the infinitive will usually be used in the dependent clause. Only a brief summary can be here given for the student's guide.

292. The more common uses of the subjunctive occur after words expressing: —

*a. Command, request, demand, etc.: —*

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Mando que se traiga el preso             | I order the prisoner to be brought<br>in |
| Exijimos que se le trate con<br>justicia | We demand that he be treated<br>justly   |

*b. Permission, approval, disposition, preference: —*

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Permítame V. le diga que no es<br>verdad | Allow me to tell you that it is<br>not true |
| Dispondrá que todos sean convi-<br>dados | He will arrange that all be in-<br>vited    |

Note, in the first example, the omission of *que* before *diga* (see 159, c).

*c. Wish, joy, regret, grief, surprise, hope, fear, etc.: —*

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Quiero (deseo) que no consienta en<br>ello | I wish (desire) him not to con-<br>sent to it |
| Sentimos que V. no pueda venir             | We are sorry that you can not<br>come         |
| Se pone triste de que me ausente           | He grieves because I absent my-<br>self       |

*d. Doubt, denial, or after questions in which the speaker seeks information: —*

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Dudo que <b>nieve</b> esta noche                             | I doubt whether it will snow to-night                  |
| ¿Piensa V. que <b>salga</b> el vapor antes de que lleguemos? | Do you think the steamer will go out before we arrive? |
| No creo que <b>venga</b> mientras llueve                     | I don't think he will come while it rains              |

*e.* After impersonal verbs and impersonal expressions: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Será necesario que <b>esperemos</b> dos horas | It will be necessary that we wait two hours |
| Es lástima que no <b>pueda</b> venir          | It is a pity he can not come                |
| Es bueno que lo <b>hagamos</b>                | It is right that we do it                   |
| Conviene que lo <b>olviden</b>                | It is proper that they forget it            |

**293.** The subjunctive, preceded by **que**, is sometimes used to express an alternative, independently of the character of the thought of the principal clause: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Que se <b>vaya</b> ó se <b>quede</b> , todo es uno | Whether he go or stay, it is all the same |
|--|---|

**294.** The subjunctive is used after relative pronouns —

*a.* When the antecedent clause involves an idea of *doubt, negation, uncertainty, etc.*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Dudo que haya hombre <b>que</b> le <b>iguale</b> | I doubt whether there is a man who equals him   |
| No hay mal que por bien no <b>venga</b>          | There is no evil which may not come for good (It is an ill wind that blows no one good) |
| No es V. el solo que <b>diga</b> la verdad       | You are not the only one who tells the truth  |

*b.* When *uncertainty, doubt, contingency, etc.*, are implied in the relative clause: —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Busco un criado que no se <b>emborrache</b>           | I am looking for a servant who does not get drunk  |
| Pese á quién pese, ahora no puedo <b>volver atrás</b> | Grieve whom it may grieve, I can not now turn back |



**295.** Learn 171 to 171, *d*, inclusive.

**296.** Ejercicio Veintinueve

1. Dígale (216) de mi parte que venga (223) en seguida.
2. Ruega que yo no me vaya dejándole á solas. 3. Le pido (202) á usted que lo haga (218) por mí. 4. Mi padre aprueba que yo pase la noche aquí con mi cuñada. 5. Manda á decirme que prefiere que partamos esta tarde. 6. Me alegro de que (159) nos marchemos mañana. 7. Espero con ansia que busquen otros medios. 8. Tememos que conozca otro camino mejor que éste. 9. Dudamos que paguen lo que deben. 10. ¿Piensa V. que yo toque tan bien como ella? 11. No creemos que distinga bien la diferencia de significado de las dos palabras. 12. Es posible que envíe los periódicos por el primer tren que viene (223). 13. Importa mucho que yo continúe mi viaje para llegar á veinte del corriente. 14. No eran de opinión que dijera lo que creía. 15. No lo hago (218), que le guste ó no. 16. ¿Se puede encontrar mujer que sea más encantadora? 17. Quién habrá (165, 3) que no recuerde aquel día? 18. Vaya V. (235) á un retiro donde esté más tranquilo que aquí. 19. El día en que esa ley se quebrante se derrumbará el coloso.

20. The king orders that the band play the national<sup>2</sup> hymn<sup>1</sup>.
21. Tell them (58) to pay their debts like honorable<sup>2</sup> men<sup>1</sup>.
22. The judge demands that the jury investigate the charges.
23. The advertisement requests that (the) candidates apply at the office. 24. Allow me to pick-up these pieces. 25. The landlord prefers that we seek other apartments. 26. I am surprised that you do not know him. 27. He hopes that we will telegraph for (*por*) her trunk. 28. He fears that, going home alone, we may lose our way. 29. They said they doubted whether it would be necessary. 30. Do you think that [by] reading more slowly, I shall understand better? 31. He did not believe that the soldiers would flee (171, *d*) at the first (27) onslaught. 32. It is possible that he does not know (230) it. 33. It



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

Note that the above tenses are limited in use, as, in most cases, the present or perfect subjunctive may be used instead: —

|  |                         |
|--|-------------------------|
| Mientras yo <i>viviere</i> <i>or</i> <i>viva</i>   | While I (shall) live    |
| Quando <i>hubiere</i> <i>or</i> <i>haya</i> venido | When he shall have come |

**299. Other tenses.** The rules given for the present apply equally for other tenses of the subjunctive. Illustrative examples, therefore, will be given only in the exercises.

**300. The sequence of tenses** in Spanish, as in English, is determined by the phase of thought to be rendered and presents no special difficulty that needs to be treated at length.

**301. Conditional sentences.** When a condition is to be expressed, it may be assumed either as realized, in which case the indicative is used, or as contingent and uncertain, when the subjunctive will be required. The two following sets of sentences will make plain the difference: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Si <i>viene</i> á verme, vamos <i>or</i> iremos á caza   | If he comes to see me, we go <i>or</i> shall go hunting        |
| Si <i>venía</i> á verme, íbamos al campo   | If he came to see me, we used to go to the country             |
| Si <i>vino</i> á verme aquel día, no lo supe   | If he came to see me that day, I did not know it               |
| Si <i>había</i> venido á mi casa, fué porque quería verme  | If he had come to my house, it was because he wished to see me |
| Si <i>viniere</i> á verme hoy, iremos de caza  | If he shall come to see me to-day, we shall go hunting         |
| Si <i>viniera</i> <i>or</i> <i>viniese</i> á verme, iríamos <i>or</i> fuéramos al teatro               | If he should come to see me, we should go to the theater       |
| Si <i>hubiera</i> <i>or</i> <i>hubiese</i> venido á verme, habríamos <i>or</i> hubiéramos ido á pasear | If he had come to see me, we should have gone to take a walk   |

*a.* It will be seen from the last two sentences, that either the first or second forms of the subjunctive (imperfect or pluperfect) may be

used in the condition (protasis) and the conditional or first form in the conclusion (apodosis).

Note also that neither the present nor perfect subjunctive can be used after *si*, when it expresses a condition (*if*). When, however, *si* is concessive (*whether*) the subjunctive may be used; e.g. *dudo si me ame, I doubt whether he loves me.*

**302. Optative sentences.** The subjunctive is used in exclamatory sentences with the force of an optative: —

|                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| ¡Si viniese sólo una vez!         | If he would come but once!      |
| ¡Quién supiera escribir!          | Would that I knew how to write! |
| ¡Quisiera el cielo que así fuese! | Would to heaven it were so!     |

**303.** Learn the three conjugations in accordance with the scheme laid down in 172 to 173, *d*, inclusive.

### 304. Ejercicio Treinta

1. Á fin de que no tenga que (166, 3) quejarse, pagaremos hasta el postrer (27) cornado. 2. Á menos que no llueva (181) hoy, iremos (235) al campo. 3. Espero estar de vuelta antes que llegue (171, 2). 4. Con tal que lo haga (218) hoy, no me quejaré de su tardanza. 5. Cuando venga (223) dígame (216) lo que he dicho (216). 6. Acaso no sepa (230) que estamos aquí. 7. Quizás no oiga (215) lo que dice (216) usted. 8. Viva V. si pudiere (230), y muera (199) si no pudiere más. 9. Sea cual fuere (164) el valor de su amigo de usted, el mío (74) tiene más. 10. Mientras tuvieramos (*or* tengamos) bastante dinero, continuaremos la huelga. 11. Aseguróme que lo haría (218) sin que nadie le ayudara. 12. Tenían la intención de quedar á orillas de la mar hasta que vinieran (223) sus amigos. 13. Los novios resolvieron ñ pasar su luna de miel en las montañas para que no les importunasen los curiosos. 14. Por ricos que hubiesen sido, no habrían estado contentos. 15. Aunque no hayan estudiado mucho su lección, la saben bastante bien. 16. Dudo

(*or no sé*, 230) *si quiero* (230), *si quería*, *si quise*, *si querré*, *si habré querido*, *si quiera*, *si quisiera*, *si querría*, *si haya querido*, *si hubiera*, *habría ó hubiese querido*. 17. *Creyó*, *juzgó*, *había pensado que le pidiera* (202), *pediría ó pidiese alguna fianza*. 18. *Si quiere acompañarnos, no nos opondremos*. 19. *Si querías salir á paseo, seguíamos sin vacilar*. 20. *Si quisiere vernos hoy, admítale V. en seguida*. 21. *Si quisiera (quisiese) aceptar las condiciones, eso nos satisficiera (satisfaría, 219)*. 22. *Pluguiera (229) á Dios que no saliese así*.

23. *Granted that he does not admit it, what shall we do?*  
 24. *I shall wait until he knows the lesson*. 25. *Provided he writes the letter to-night, we shall carry it*. 26. *In order that he may have (164) the best advantages, we shall send him to Paris*. 27. *Unless he behaves (177) himself better, we shall dismiss him at the end of the month*. 28. *When he admits his fault, we shall pardon him*. 29. *Oh that he may live a day longer!* 30. *Perhaps they do not understand the difference*. 31. *I shall take advantage of your offer, if I have occasion to (*de*) do so (*lo*)*. 32. *Even though they may have receded from their position, we shall not yield*. 33. *They would have given more without anyone (*nadie*) asking it*. 34. *They informed us that they would not permit it, unless he paid the money*. 35. *In order that he might have sufficient time, he arose at four o'clock*. 36. *They had to (166, 3) study their lessons until they were permitted (*se les permitía*) [to] go out to (*á*) play*. 37. *If we write this afternoon, they will receive our letter to-morrow*. 38. *If they went (235) fishing, they used to (275, a) remain until the next<sup>2</sup> day<sup>1</sup>*. 39. *If they had finished their task, why did they not tell me (58) so?* 40. *If they shall accept our proposition, we shall begin at once*. 41. *If the carrier should bring our mail at ten o'clock, we should answer our letters before noon*. 42. *If I had invested more money, I should have risked my (65) whole fortune*.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



e. As a general or impersonal imperative: —

Dirigirse por escrito á X. Y.

Address in writing X. Y.

**308.** The *to* before the English infinitive is variously rendered in Spanish, being determined somewhat by the inherent nature of the *noun*, *adjective*, or *verb* on which the Spanish infinitive depends. It may be treated under the following headings: —

a. **De** is used before a dependent infinitive —

1. After most nouns and a few adjectives: —

Tengo ganas de ir á patinar

I have a desire to go skating

Tiene intención de casarse

He intends to get married

Temeroso de salir engañado

Afraid of getting cheated

2. When an infinitive, depending on an adjective or the verb *to be* (*ser*), may logically be translated by the passive: —

Nada es más fácil de remediar

Nothing is easier to be remedied

Eso no es de extrañar

That is not to be wondered at

NOTE. — After a few nouns and adjectives *á* is used: —

Desde largo tiempo era su ambición á venir aquí

For a long time his ambition was to come here

Se hallaba próxima á desfallecer

She was ready to faint

3. When an infinitive depends on a noun or adjective standing in a predicate or quasi-predicate relation, the preposition is usually omitted: —

Mejor fuera no hablar de ello

It were better not to speak of it

La visita que tuvieron VV. á bien hacerme

The visit which you thought proper (fit) to make me

**309.** An infinitive depending on a verb stands without a preposition or is preceded by **de**, **á**, **en**, **por**, or **para**. **Á** always follows verbs of motion, while **por** or **para** will usually be the equivalent of the English *to* meaning *in order to*. In other cases observation has to be relied on for learning the distinction. See exercises (311) for examples.

a. Verbs of *hearing* (oír) and *seeing* (ver) take preferably the infinitive but may take the gerund: —

|                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Le oigo hablar <i>or</i> hablando | I hear him talk <i>or</i> talking |
| La veo venir <i>or</i> viniendo   | I see her come <i>or</i> coming   |

310. Review the auxiliary verbs, 164.

### 311. Ejercicio Treinta y Uno

1. Según dice (216) el refrán, el preservarse (70) la vida es la primera ley de la naturaleza. 2. Al ponerse el sol la vista se deleitaba con el variar de los colores que se pintaban en las nubes. 3. «Callar en Vida y Perdonar en Muerte» es título de un cuento de *Fernán Caballero*. 4. *Fernán Caballero* esseudónimo de Cecilia Böhl de Faber, célebre novelista española. 5. El amar una madre á sus hijos es natural, aun cuando ella es una salvaje. 6. Resolvimos comer antes de partir para la próxima aldea. 7. Era un atolondrado y hablaba sin saber lo que decía. 8. Me complazco en hacer pública la halagüeña noticia que recibí por el correo de esta mañana. 9. No tardaremos en poner por obra la excelente idea que usted indica. 10. ¿Cómo pintar mi deleite al ver tan linda criatura aparecer delante de mis ojos? 11. Á saber yo el delito, no le hubiera perdonado. 12. De haberlo hecho (218) él, habría abusado de la hospitalidad de sus amigos. 13. Tengan VV. la bondad de escucharme antes de condenarme. 14. Seguro de llevarse el primer premio no tardó un instante en entrar en la carrera montado en su magnífico caballo. 15. Eran de ver los saraos que había (165, 3) entonces en los palacios. 16. Gran parte es de la fortuna venir un hombre en una edad ú (159, b) otra. 17. Cosa es clara y conocida ser la historia luz de la verdad. 18. Creemos del caso dar nuestra opinión otra vez sobre lo que discutimos ayer con tanto fervor.

19. (*Use de.*) I abstain from saying what I would do on similar occasions. 20. He repents of having abandoned his



career of lawyer. 21. Never did (163, *a*) he cease to regret the premature death of his beloved<sup>2</sup> wife<sup>1</sup>. 22. They never failed to be (18, *b*) at the station whenever they were expecting their friends. 23. He dissuaded me from studying two foreign<sup>2</sup> languages<sup>1</sup> at the same time. 24. Excuse me from accepting the explanation which he thought fit to make me (308, 3). 25. He swore to avenge the death of his brother at all hazard. 26. I have forgotten (179) to call at (*por*) the post office to (*para*) find out whether there were (165, 3) [any] letters. 27. He will try to learn several languages before starting to travel. 28. (*Use á.*) He did (163, *a*) not succeed in reaching the land before sinking. 29. I learned to speak (the) Castilian in a few months. 30. We will not venture to ask the cause of his absence. 31. Now it begins to dawn about five o'clock. 32. The prisoner has been condemned to death in the electric<sup>2</sup> chair<sup>1</sup>. 33. He would have invited me to take (*hacer*) pot-luck with him (58, *k*) but his wife was absent. 34. He began (use *dar á*) to laugh without knowing why. 35. He sent to say that he would be here within an hour. 36. I go out to walk every day at four o'clock. 37. He came to ask for me (58) but he was told (179) that I was not in. 38. We shall ask again (246) whether he will (233) pay the debt without forcing us to appeal to the law. 39. (*Omit preposition.*) He is accustomed to retire at eleven o'clock and rise at six. 40. It suffices to say that, according to his record, his conduct has been perfect. 41. When one is [a] soldier, it is proper to obey without discussing (the) orders. 42. He said (216) *he did not know (infinitive)* that he ought to come to the office to-day [it] being [a] holiday. 43. I wished (230) to buy a good (27) riding horse, but I could (230) not find one in the city. 44. They did not deign to answer my letter, I know (230) not why. 45. Let me see the book which I loaned you (58) two hours ago. 46. I am having (218) a new suit made. 47. He attempted to enter by the window but he could not (230). 48. I offer (the) fifty (51) per cent of the cost.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**



317. Review the three regular conjugations, 170.

318. Ejercicio Treinta y Dos

1. El vapor entró en el puerto llevando una carga consistente en minerales, cueros y café. 2. La señora Pérez lucía un traje magnífico y una cruz de brillantes pendiente de su cuello. 3. Efectos pertenecientes á la Cruz Roja se encontraron en el hospital. 4. Llegando mis amigos, partimos á cazar. 5. Ella se salió con la suya lisonjeándole. 6. No quería avanzar el capitán, estando ausente el general. 7. Les (58) consulté si creían que podía yo continuar el combate, contestando que no. 8. En corriendo á todo andar arribará el torpedero á las cuatro de la tarde. 9. El senador habiendo concluido su discurso se sentó. 10. Los proyectos de ley votados por el Senado fueron rechazados por la Cámara. 11. Pasado el momento de peligro, renovamos nuestros esfuerzos. 12. Después de acabada nuestra tarea, fuimos (235) á casa. 13. Antes de concluido su discurso se desmayó. 14. Luego de contádomelo no quiso (230) hablar más. 15. No es una proposición para rechazada. 16. ¿Ha visto (226) usted al señor don Manuel Quevedo? — No, señor, no le he visto hoy. 17. Caballero, celebro muchísimo la ocasión de conocer á usted. 18. En las *Cortes* los individuos comienzan sus discursos por decir: ¡*Señores!* No tengo la intención de hacer un largo discurso, etc. 19. Pero el mismo orador teniendo que (166, 3) discurrir delante de una reunión promiscua de personas principiaría diciendo: *Señoras, señoritas y caballeros.* 20. Buenas tardes, señor Doctor; ¿está en casa su señora parienta? — Sí, señora; está. 21. El almirante Pascual Cervera y Topete, que peleó valientemente en la batalla de Santiago de Cuba con los americanos, murió hace algunos días. 22. Á los pies de usted, señorita María. Acabo de (237) recibir una carta para usted. 23. Se lo agradezco á usted muchísimo, caballero.

## XLI

**319.** Learn the irregular tenses of the verbs under Classes I and II, 185-193\* inclusive.

**320. Ejercicio Treinta y Tres**

1. Siendo hoy día festivo, ¿qué piensa V. hacer? — Nada que sepa (230). 2. Yo pienso ir al casino del parque, donde se reúnen á conversar algunos amigos, y haremos (218) un partido de billar. 3. ¿Por qué tiemblas tanto, no habiendo llegado todavía al punto más peligroso? 4. Siéntese V., señora, en ese sillón, que abre amorosamente sus brazos para recibirla. 5. Que se siente ó no, no pienso que sea de mi deber quedarme en pie. 6. Tiemblan por la vida de sus parientes, que están (164) ahora en el océano. 7. ¿Piensan VV. que merienden en la posada ó en el jardín de Apolo? 8. Sentaos (176, a), que es más cómodo estar sentados que estar en pie. 9. Yo no pienso que ella entienda de poesía. — Ni yo tampoco. 10. Después de merendado (315, a), el papá enciende un puro, se pone el sombrero y sale, y la mamá atiende á sus quehaceres domésticos. 11. Empiecen por decir que no entienden nada de lo que se les dice (216 and 179). 12. Contad conmigo (58, k), amigos míos; estaré allí dentro de hora y media. 13. Se nos cuenta que los discípulos juegan demasiado. 14. No creo que sea de dudar. Desde mucho tiempo soy de opinión que mi hijo juega demasiado y no estudia bastante. 15. Me acuesto á las once cada noche y me levanto temprano. 16. Perro que ladra no muerde, dice (216) el refrán. 17. Á pesar de sus esfuerzos yerran casi siempre el blanco. 18. Erre que erre se dice (216) de una persona que repite y insiste sobre una cosa. 19. Voy (235) á Madrid hoy y vuelvo á casa mañana. 20. Re-

\* It is an excellent plan to have one or more students write the verbs on the board while the others are reciting.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## XLIII

**323.** Learn the irregular tenses of the verbs in sections 205 to 210 inclusive.

**324. Ejercicio Treinta y Cinco**

1. Huye el impío sin que nadie le persiga. 2. Tuvo (166, 2) miedo y huyó como un condenado. 3. ¿Qué es el refrán inglés que corresponde al español?: *huye del fuego y da en las brasas*. 4. El excusarse arguye mal por el que lo hace. 5. Arguyeron y volvieron á (246) argüir la cuestión, pero no alcanzaron ninguna conclusión. 6. ¡Ándeme yo caliente y ríase la gente! 7. Andando el tiempo los dolores más agudos se apagan poco á poco. 8. El politicastro anduvo en todas partes buscando influencia política. 9. Te lo doy á tí (58, f) y no á tu hermano. 10. Huyendo del fuego dió en las brasas. 11. Dí á luz mi gramática española en mil novecientos y dos (51). 12. Les dimos á entender que no se les permitiría (179) hacerlo. 13. Dando un paseo en el parque dieron con algunos amigos y fueron (235) al casino en donde (144, a) merendaron y jugaron á los naipes. 14. Demos á cada uno lo suyo (77), venga lo que viniere (223). 15. El reloj acaba de (237) dar la una de la mañana; acostemonos (176, a).

## XLIV

**325.** Learn the irregular tenses of sections 213 to 219 inclusive.

**326. Ejercicio Treinta y Seis**

1. En esta vida es la honradez una inversión costosa, pero puede (230) uno estar seguro de que (159, e) pagará buenos dividendos en el porvenir. 2. «Ya caigo,» dijo (216), después

de reflexionar un momento. 3. Es un atolondrado y hace las suyas, caiga el que caiga. 4. Ven (223) acá, hijito; tememos que caigas por la ventana. 5. Pasando el río á caballo cayó al agua el jinete. 6. Niños: el primero que traiga buenas notas de la escuela, recibirá media docena de naranjas. 7. Tráigame V., si le gusta, una copa de agua fresca. 8. El cartero acaba de (237) pasar y trajo dos cartas y los diarios. 9. Oigo subir la escalera; ¿quién puede ser? 10. *Quien* (90, 3d) *escucha, su mal oye*, dice el refrán. 11. ¡Oiga! se dice para llamar la atención de alguno. 12. Oyeron, vieron y callaron. 13. Se levantó á las cinco y oyó misa. 14. Digo que sí. — Y yo digo que no. 15. Dicen los periódicos que habrá (165, 3) guerra, pero no lo creo. 16. Permítame V. se lo diga que bajo las circunstancias eso no sería posible. 17. Juró el testigo que diría la verdad, toda la verdad y nada que la verdad. 18. Se lo dijimos en su cara y quedó corto. 19. Él te bendecirá como yo te bendigo. 20. Dicho y hecho. 21. En vez de hacer lo que prometió, hizo lo contrario. 22. Yo hago venir un diccionario francés de París. 23. Hagamos nuestro deber y pongamos (222) nuestra confianza en Dios. 24. Dijeron que harían por venir, si fuera posible. 25. No creí que lo hiciera (hiciese) mejor que el otro. 26. Si hiciere (hace) mal tiempo esta tarde, no saldremos (220) de casa.

## XLV

327. Learn the irregular tenses of sections 220 to 223 inclusive.

### 328. Ejercicio Treinta y Siete

1. Temo que me salga demasiado caro. 2. Mañana saldremos por la línea transatlántica para los Estados Unidos. 3. Saldrían más temprano, si pudieran (230) almorzar á las siete. 4. Dado que saliese bien, la ganancia no igualaría la costa.



5. Insistí que no se salieran (saliesen) de la cuestión que discutían. 6. ¿Cuánto vale? — No creo que valga tanto como usted piensa. 7. Estos géneros no valdrían tanto, si no fuera por el arancel subido. 8. Era lástima que no valieran bastante para que se pudieran aceptar como equivalentes. 9. ¡Hasta la vista! Póngame V. á los pies de su señora madre (316, a). 10. Pongamos fin, caballero, á la entrevista, si le gusta. 11. Cuando vió (226) acercarse al enemigo, puso los pies en polvorosa en vez de ponerse á la defensiva. 12. Señores, propondría que brindemos por la salud de nuestro huésped. 13. Vino á pedirme perdón del insulto, pero no acepté su explicación. 14. Véngase V., que quiero presentarle á nuestro afamado orador. 15. Ven-gamos al caso, amigos míos (67), que no queremos salirnos tanto de la cuestión. 16. ¿Estará V. al círculo esta noche? — Que sí. — Muy bien; vendré yo también, y acabaremos nuestro partido de billar. 17. Si viniera (viniese) á verme, le diría (216) lo que pienso de su conducta.

## XLVI

**329.** Learn the irregular tenses of sections 225 to 229 inclusive.

### 330. Ejercicio Treinta y Ocho

1. Aquel hombre no cabe por la puerta. 2. La iglesia es grande, pero no es posible que quepan tantas personas en ella. 3. Si alcanzara lo que desea, no cabría en sí de gozo. 4. Preferían que cupiera en esta vasija que en aquélla (81). 5. No le he visto esta mañana, pero estoy seguro de que (159, e) está en la ciudad. 6. Veamos si contiene tanto como dijo (216). 7. Ví en la plaza tanta gente que no pude (230) contarla. 8. Vimos acercarse un regimiento de cazadores que salían del bosque. 9. Si jamás se viera (viese) niño más contento al recibir el regalo, lo dudo. 10. Si uno quiere hacer burbujas, no faltarán



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

del puente, no podría avanzar más el enemigo. 11. Quisiéramos que todo el mundo supiera lo ocurrido y pudiera hacer esfuerzos para remediarlo. 12. Haga V. por mejorar su posición, si pudiere, y, si no supiere hacerlo, déjeme en paz.

## XLVIII

**333.** Learn sections 235, 236, 237, 242, 243, and read carefully 238, 239, 240, 241, 243.

**334.**

### Ejercicio Cuarenta

1. Voy á la iglesia y quiero que ella vaya conmigo (58, *k*).  
 2. ¿Á dónde (144, *a*) van VV. tan de mañana? — Vamos á oír misa en la Catedral. 3. «Vaya V. con Dios» dice el español, despidiendo á un amigo ó huésped. 4. Vamos á ver si el cartero ha traído nuestro correo. 5. Iba Ponce de León buscando la fuente maravillosa de la juventud y descubrió la Florida. 6. Iré mañana á Oviedo por el primer tren que salga (220). 7. Íbamos caminando hacia la aldea, cuando dimos con (210) un salteador de camino quien (90, 1st) nos quitó todo nuestro dinero. 8. Iríamos al mercado si pudieramos (pudiesemos) comprar melocotones. 9. Yo fuí al campo y él fué al bosque; y, encontrándonos más tarde, fuimos los dos á pescar en el arroyo. 10. Si fuera (fuese) posible, dicen (216) que irían á pasar el verano en las montañas. 11. Acaba de merendar y no tiene más hambre (166, 2). 12. No acababa de amarle á pesar de sí. 13. Suele salir á pasearse en coche diariamente. 14. La puerta está abierta ahora, pero no lo estará dentro de poco. 15. Ella tiene la cabeza cubierta de una mantilla, lo que la sienta bien. 16. Estas cartas, escritas un año ha, sólo acaban de llegar hoy.

## XLIX

## SPANISH ABBREVIATIONS

335. The following is a list of the more common abbreviations. Where usage varies in regard to small or capital letters, the former have been given in parenthesis. When beginning a sentence any of them may be written with a capital.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| (a), alias, <i>alias</i>   | cm., centímetro, <i>centimeter</i>                                |
| @, arroba (= 25 lbs.; also 4 gals.),<br>and á, <i>at</i>                     | C. M. B. (c. m. b.), <i>cuya mano beso</i>                        |
| A., afecto, <i>obedient, affectionate</i>                                    | com., comisión, <i>commission</i>                                 |
| A. C. (año de Cristo) = <i>A.D.</i>  | comp. <sup>a</sup> (cía.), <i>compañía = Co.</i>                  |
| á cta., á cuenta, <i>on account</i>  | consig., consignación, <i>consignment</i>                         |
| admón., administración   | corr. <sup>te</sup> , corriente, <i>instant</i>                   |
| admor., administrador  | C. P. B. (c. p. b.), <i>cuyos pies beso</i>                       |
| af. <sup>mo</sup> , afectísimo, <i>most obedient,</i><br><i>affectionate</i> | cta. d/v., <i>cuenta de venta, ac-</i><br><i>count of sales</i>   |
| af. <sup>to</sup> , afecto, <i>obedient, affectionate</i>                    | cte., corriente, <i>instant</i>                                   |
| ag. <sup>to</sup> , agosto, <i>August</i>                                    | c. <sup>to</sup> , cuarto, <i>quarter, fourth</i>                 |
| am. <sup>o</sup> , amigo, <i>friend</i>                                      | cy., currency, <i>currency</i>                                    |
| apble., apreciable, <i>favor</i>   | D. or Dn., <i>Don.</i>  |
| art. or arto., artículo, <i>article</i>                                      | dic. <sup>e</sup> , 10. <sup>e</sup> , <i>diciembre, December</i> |
| att. <sup>o</sup> , atento, <i>respectful</i>                                | doz., docena, <i>dozen</i>  |
| á v/a, á la vista, <i>at sight</i>   | dro., derecho, <i>duty, right</i>                                 |
| B. L. M. (b. l. m.), <i>besa la mano</i>                                     | dup. <sup>do</sup> , duplicado, <i>duplicate</i>                  |
| B. L. P. (b. l. p.), <i>besa los pies</i>                                    | d/v., días vista, <i>days sight</i>                               |
| brl., barril, <i>barrel</i>  | E., este, <i>east</i>   |
| c., cuenta, <i>account</i>   | en. <sup>o</sup> , enero, <i>January</i>                          |
| c/., cuenta de, <i>account of</i>  | feb. <sup>o</sup> , febrero, <i>February</i>                      |
| cap. or cap. <sup>o</sup> , capítulo, <i>chapter</i>                         | fha., fecha, <i>date</i>  |
| cap. <sup>n</sup> , capitán, <i>captain</i>                                  | fol., folio, <i>page, folio</i>                                   |
| c./c. <sup>te</sup> , cuenta corriente, <i>account</i><br><i>current</i>     | g., gramo, <i>gram</i>  |
| cg., centígramo, <i>centigram</i>  | gral., general  |
| cía., compañía, <i>company</i>   | grs., gruesa, <i>gross</i>  |
| cl., centilitro, <i>centiliter</i>   | h., hora, <i>hour</i>   |
|  | Hl., hectolitro, <i>hectoliter</i>                                |
|  | ib., ibídem, <i>in the same place</i>                             |

íd., ídem, *ditto*  
 Il.<sup>o</sup>, ilustre, *noble, honorable*  
 Il.<sup>mo</sup>, ilustrísimo, *most noble, etc.*  
 izq.<sup>o</sup>, izquierdo, *left*  
 Kg., kilogramo, *kilogram*  
 Km., kilómetro, *kilometer*  
 lbs., libras, *pounds*  
 m., minuto, metro, *minute, meter*  
 mg., miligramo, *milligram*  
 mm., milímetro, *millimeter*  
 mrz., marzo, *March*  
 N., norte, *north*  
 n/., nuestro, *our*  
 N. B., nota bene, *note well*  
 n.<sup>o</sup> or núm.<sup>o</sup>, *number*  
 nov.<sup>o</sup>, 9.<sup>o</sup>, noviembre, *November*  
 ntro., nuestro, *our*  
 O., oeste, *west*  
 oct.<sup>o</sup>, 8.<sup>o</sup>, octubre, *October*  
 onz., oz., onza, *ounce*  
 P., Papa or Padre, *Pope or Father*  
 p.<sup>a</sup>, para, *for*  
 pág., página, *page*  
 pc/o., %, por ciento, *per cent*  
 P. D., posdata, *postscript*  
 p/cta., por cuenta, *for account*  
 p. ej., por ejemplo, *for example*  
 pgdro., pagadero, *payable*  
 p.<sup>o</sup>, pero, *but*  
 p. o., por orden, *by order*  
 P. P., porte pagado, *postpaid*  
 P. P., por poder, *by power of attorney*  
 pp.<sup>do</sup>, próximo pasado, *ultimo*  
 p.<sup>r</sup>, por, *by, for*  
 pral., principal  
 P. S., postscriptum, *postscript*  
 pxo., próximo, *proximo, next*

Q. B. S. M. (q. b. s. m.), que besa  
 sus manos  
 Q. B. S. P. (q. b. s. p.), que besa  
 sus pies  
 Q. D. G. (q. D. g.), que Dios  
 guarde  
 q.<sup>o</sup>, que, *that, which, who*  
 ql., quintal, *quintal (cwt.)*  
 q.<sup>u</sup>, quien, *who, whom*  
 q. e. g. e., que en gloria esté,  
 q. e. p. d., que en paz descanse,  
 q. s. g. h., que santa gloria  
 haya,  
 R. I. P., requiescat in pace,  
 R.<sup>bl</sup>, recibí, *(I) received*  
 Re., récipe, *recipe*  
 r.<sup>l</sup>, real, "*real*" (about 10 ¢).  
 s/., sobre, *on*  
 sept.<sup>o</sup>, set.<sup>o</sup>, 7.<sup>o</sup>, septiembre  
 serv.<sup>o</sup>, servicio, *service*  
 serv.<sup>or</sup>, servidor, *servant*  
 S. e. ú o., salvo error ú omisión,  
*save errors and omissions*  
 sig.<sup>te</sup>, siguiente, *following*  
 spre., siempre, *always, ever*  
 Sr., señor, *Sir, Mr.*  
 Sra., señora, *Mrs., Madam*  
 Srta., señorita, *Miss*  
 S. S. S., su seguro servidor, *your*  
*faithful servant*  
 test.<sup>o</sup>, testigo, *witness*  
 tom. (t.<sup>o</sup>), tomo, *volume*  
 tpo., tiempo, *time*  
 últ.<sup>o</sup>, último, *ultimo, last*  
 V. E., Vuestra Excelencia, Vue-  
 celencia, Vucencia, *Your Grace*  
 v. gr., verbigracia, *for example*

R. I. P.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



**337.** Letters may begin in one of many ways, but the following may be taken as specimens in formal and informal correspondence. For abbreviations see 335: —

Aunque no tengo el honor de conocer á V., me tomo la libertad de dirigirle estas líneas para . . .

Ya es tiempo que coja la pluma para dedicar un rato á mis buenos amigos . . .

Adjunto remito á V. una libranza de 30 pesetas en pago de . . .

Llegó á ésta su deseada en época que yo me encontraba en Madrid . . .

Refiriéndome á su favorecida del 25 del pp.<sup>do</sup> tengo el honor de contestar que . . .

Tengo el gusto de acusar recibo de su atenta fechada el 10 corriente . . .

Contestando su grata fechada el 7 del actual, desearía informarle que . . .

Es en mi poder su muy atenta de ayer, y me apresuro á contestar que . . .

Acusando recibo de su favorecida fechada en 22 de octubre, me permito mandarle la cta. d/v. de . . .

**338.** Of the many ways of closing letters, the following will serve as specimens: —

*a. Formal (more or less): —*

Nos repitimos de V. con afecto S. S., Q. B. S. M.

Tenemos mucho gusto en ofrecernos S. S. S. y amigos, Q. B. S. M.

Dios guarde á V. muchos años como desea su muy atento servidor, Q. B. S. M.

Reitero á VV. mi afecto y quedo como siempre S. S. S., Q. B. S. M.

Soy (quedo) de V. su muy afecto seguro servidor, q. b. s. m.

Entre tanto queda á sus órdenes su atto. S. S., q. b. s. m.

Con tal motivo me ofrezco de V. afmo. S. S., q. b. s. m.

*b. Familiar and informal: —*

Salude V. á su señora y niños y sabe que es su afmo. que le quiere,

LOPE DE VEGA.

Afectos de toda la familia y sabe V. es su afmo. y S. S.,

ESTEBAN BANCHS.

Saludo cariñosamente á V. y á todos los suyos, y quedo su am.º y  
S. S.,

ENRIQUE GARCÍA.

Que le vaya bien y disponga de este su am.º y servidor,

MANUEL MENDOZA.

Sin más por hoy sabes que puedes disponer del afecto de este tu  
amigo y S. S.,

DIEGO GUTIÉRREZ.

NOTE. — While the letters Q. B. S. M. are still in good use, especially in very formal communications, it is becoming more and more customary to omit them, as in the last examples and more particularly in business letters.

### 339. Letters are addressed as follows: —

*When sent by mail,*

Señor Don (*or* Sr. Dn.) E—— B——

Señora Doña (*or* Sra. Da.) M—— O——

Señorita A—— G—— de P——

The direction coming immediately after, as in English.

*When sent by hand,*

*a. To men: —*

B. L. M.  
Al Sr. Dn. L. de Q——

S. S. S.

Enrique Pérez.

B. L. M.  
Á Don R——

S. S. S.

D. de Manjón.

B. L. M.  
Al Sr. M——

S. S. S.

Benito Bazán.

*b. To ladies: —*

B. L. P.  
Á mi Sra. Da. J—— P——

S. A. S. S.

Rodríguez Guevara.

B. L. P.  
Á la Sra. Da. J—— P——

S. A. S. S.

Emilio Castelar.

B. L. P.  
Á la Sra. A—— S——

S. A. S. S.

Ramón Rey.



## 340. LETTERS AND BUSINESS FORMS\*

## CARTA DE COMERCIO

CEBALLOS Y CÍA.,

NEW YORK.

Cable: CEBALLOS.

Setbre. 9, 1910.

SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.,

Habana.

*Muy Sres. nuestros: —*

Confirmamos n/. anterior de 5 del cte. y acusamos recibo de su apble. del 1º, de cuyo contenido quedamos impuestos y seguiremos sus instrucciones respecto al embarque de las sillas para el Sr. D. Julio Sánchez.

Ahora tenemos el gusto de acompañar factura correspondiente al embarque que hemos hecho en el vapor *City of Washington* de 200 rollos alambre para cercas, cuyo importe de \$646.65 dejamos cargado á VV. en cuenta.

Somos sus muy attos. S. S.,

Q. B. S. M.

\* See 335 for all abbreviations hereinafter found.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

## CARTA DE COMERCIO

CEBALLOS Y CÍA.,

NEW YORK.

Cable: CEBALLOS.

Agosto 15, 1910.

SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.,

Habana.

*Muy Sres. nuestros: —*

Confirmamos n/. anterior del 6 de Julio ppdo. y carecemos de sus apbles. á que referirnos.

Ahora tenemos el gusto de acompañar la c/venta de 11 balas caucho y 7 sacos café por el vapor *City of Washington*, cuyo líquido producido de \$489.26 dejamos abonado á VV. en cuenta.

Sentimos que no hayamos podido sacar mejor partido por el café pero su calidad era tan inferior que no pudimos vender el artículo por mejor precio.

Nos repetimos sus muy attos. S. S.,

Q. B. S. M.

CUENTA DE VENTA

No. 952.

CUENTA DE VENTA de lo siguiente recibido por vapor *City of Washington* llegado Julio 7, 1910, y vendido por CEBALLOS Y CÍA. por orden y cuenta y riesgo de los Sres. B. Sánchez y Cía.

A—A

A

J—S

|   |          |          |
|---|----------|----------|
| 7 Bâlas caucho 648 <sup>21</sup> / <sub>27</sub> lbs. @ 51½ . . . . | \$322.90 |          |
| 4 ídem ídem 356 <sup>11</sup> / <sub>25</sub> ídem 45 . . . .       | 155.25   |          |
|   |          | \$478.15 |
| 7 sacos Café 1189 17½ 1171½ @ 6½ . . . .                            | 76.15    |          |
| Menos 2% descuento . . . .  | 1.52     | 74.63    |
|   |          | \$552.78 |
| <b>GASTOS</b>   |          |          |
| Seguro marítimo s/. \$600 á ½% . . . .                              | \$3.00   |          |
| Flete caucho y café (\$10.46) . . . .                               | 31.13    |          |
| Gastos de Aduana . . . . .  | 3.60     |          |
| Conducción al almacén . . . . .                                     | 1.75     |          |
| Almacenaje y trabajadores . . . . .                                 | .56      |          |
| Pesar . . . . .   | 3.63     |          |
| Seguro de incendio . . . . .  | .50      |          |
| Corretaje 1% s/. \$552.78 . . . . .                                 | 5.53     |          |
| Comisión 2½% . . . . .  | 13.82    | 63.52    |
|   |          | \$489.26 |
| Líquido producido . . . . .   |          |          |
| AL HABER de la cuenta de los<br>SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.             |          |          |

S. e. ú o.

NEW YORK, Agosto 15, 1910.

CEBALLOS & CÍA.

## LETRA DE CAMBIO

HABANA, 26 de Marzo, 1910.

Por \$150.24 cy.

Á cinco días vista de esta Primera de Cambio (no habiéndolo hecho por la Segunda ó Tercera) se servirán VV. mandar pagar á la orden de los SRES. CEBALLOS Y CÍA. la cantidad de Ciento cincuenta  $\frac{24}{100}$  pesos currency . . . . . valor recibido que cargarán VV. en nuestra cuenta, según aviso de

Á los  
SRES. ÁLVARO BAZÁN Y CÍA.,  
563 Pearl Street,  
NEW YORK.

S. S. Q. B. S. M.  
B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.

## UN PAGARÉ

Vence en 23 de Octubre de 1910.

Por \$1575.57 oro americano.

Pagaremos en esta Ciudad prefijamente el día Veintitrés de Octubre de Mil Novecientos diez á la orden de los Sres. Ceballos y Cía. la cantidad de Un mil quinientos setenta y cinco  $\frac{57}{100}$  pesos en oro americano, ó su equivalente en oro español, valor por saldo de nuestra cuenta corriente, según convenio, con intereses al seis (6 %) por ciento desde esta fecha hasta el día de su vencimiento.

HABANA, 23 de Octubre, 1909.

B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies





# SPANISH VOCABULARY

**Ch, ll, and ñ**, being separate letters, stand after **c, l, and n**.

Verbs should be looked for under their infinitives which, when irregular, are referred to the sections where their model verbs are conjugated. All forms so irregular as not to be easily traceable to their infinitives are given. In looking for the infinitives of irregular forms observe that —

1. Forms in **ue** and **u** are to be sought for under **o**: **puedo, pude**, from **poder**.

2. Those in **ie** and **i** under **e**: **siento, sintió** from **sentir**.

The gender of nouns is indicated by the letters *m.* and *f.*

A dash (—) means the repetition of the Spanish word previously defined in English.

All references are to sections.

## A

**á**, in, of, on, to.

**abalanzarse**, to rush forward, make a lunge.

**abandonar**, to abandon.

**abeja**, *f.* bee.

**abogado**, *m.* lawyer.

**abonar**, to credit; — **en cuenta**, to credit to the account of.

**abrigar**, to entertain, cherish.

**abril**, *m.* April.

**abrir**, to open.

**abuela**, *f.* grandmother.

**abuelo**, *m.* grandfather.

**abusar (de)**, to abuse, violate.

**acá**, here.

**acabar or acabarse**, to finish, complete, end.

**Academia**, *f.* Academy.

**accidente**, *m.* accident.

**aceptar**, to accept.

**acercarse**, to approach.

**acero**, *m.* steel.

**acompañado**, *-a*, accompanied.

**acompañar**, to accompany, send.

**acostarse**, to retire, lie down, go to bed.

**acto (en el)**, on the spot.

**actual**, present, instant.

**acusar**, to acknowledge.

**adelantamiento**, *m.* advancement.

**adjetivo**, *m.* adjective.

**adjunto**, *-a*, herewith.

**admitir**, to admit.

**adquirir**, to acquire.

**aduana**, *f.* custom house.

**advertir**, to notify.

**afamado**, *-a*, famous, noted.

**afectísimo**, *-a*, most, very affectionate.

**afecto**, *m.* regards, affection, love.

**afecto**, *-a*, affectionate.

**afirmar**, to affirm.

**agosto**, *m.* August.

**agradable**, agreeable, pleasant.

**agradar**, to please.

**agradecer**, to thank.

**agua**, *f.* water.

**aguardar**, to wait, await.



**agudo, -a**, sharp, acute.  
**ahí**, there.  
**ahora**, now, at present.  
**ahuyentar**, to frighten away.  
**aire, m.** air.  
**ajedrez, m.** chess.  
**al = á el**, to the.  
**ala, f.** wing.  
**alacena, f.** closet.  
**alambre para cercas, m.** fence wire.  
**alcanzar**, to reach, overtake, obtain.  
**alcoba, f.** bedroom.  
**aldea, f.** village.  
**alegrarse**, to rejoice.  
**alemán, alemana**, German.  
**Alemania, f.** Germany.  
**alfabético, -a**, alphabetical.  
**algo**, anything, something.  
**alguacil, m.** constable.  
**alguno, -a**, some, a few, any.  
**alma, f.** soul; **en el —**, deeply.  
**almacén, m.** warehouse.  
**almacenaje, m.** storage.  
**almanaque, m.** almanac.  
**almirante, m.** admiral.  
**almorzar**, to breakfast.  
**alrededor de**, around.  
**alto, -a**, tall, high.  
**allí**, there.  
**amable, amiable.**  
**amar**, to love; **el —**, loving.  
**amorosamente**, lovingly.  
**amarse**, to love oneself.  
**amenazar**, to threaten.  
**americano, -a**, American.  
**amiga, f.** friend.  
**amigo, m.** friend.  
**amo, m.** master.  
**amor, m.** love.  
**anciano, m.** old man.  
**ancho, -a**, wide.  
**andando el tiempo**, as time passes, in time.

**andar(se)**, to go, walk.  
**andar (á todo —)**, with all speed.  
**anduvo, from andar.**  
**Angélica, proper name.**  
**animal, m.** animal.  
**Anita, f., dimin. of Ana**, Anna.  
**anoche**, last night.  
**ansia (con)**, anxiously.  
**antepasado, m.** ancestor.  
**anterior**, former (*letter*).  
**antes**, formerly; **— de (que)**, before.  
**antiguo, -a**, ancient.  
**año, m.** year; **un — sí y otro no**, every other year.  
**apagar**, to put out, extinguish.  
**apagarse**, to become appeased, quiet, calm.  
**aparecer**, to appear.  
**Apolo**, Apollo; **jardín de —**, a public garden of Madrid.  
**apreciable**, favor (*of a letter*).  
**aprender**, to learn.  
**apresurarse**, to hasten, hurry.  
**aprobar (188)**, to approve, consent.  
**apto, -a**, fit.  
**apuntar**, to aim.  
**aquél**, that, that one.  
**aquel, -la**, that.  
**aquí**, here.  
**arancel, m.** tariff.  
**argüir**, to argue.  
**arma, f.** arm.  
**arquitectura, f.** architecture.  
**arrecife, m.** reef.  
**arribar**, to arrive.  
**arrogante**, arrogant.  
**arrogarse**, to arrogate to oneself.  
**arroyo, m.** brook.  
**arteria, f.** artery.  
**artículo, m.** article, goods.  
**artista, m.** artiste.  
**asegurar**, to assure.  
**aserrar**, to saw.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

- caer**, to fall.  
**café**, *m.* coffee.  
**caída**, *f.* fall.  
**caiga lo que caiga** (*from caer*),  
 happen what may.  
**caja**, *f.* case, box.  
**calidad**, *f.* quality.  
**caliente**, warm.  
**calor**, *m.* heat. [tongue.  
**callar**, to remain silent, hold one's  
**calle**, *f.* street.  
**camada**, *f.* flock.  
**Cámara**, *f.* House.  
**cambiar de**, to change.  
**cambio**, *m.* exchange.  
**caminar**, to travel, journey.  
**camino**, *m.* road, route.  
**camisa**, *f.* shirt.  
**campesino**, *-a*, rural, country;  
 —, *m.* farmer, countryman.  
**campo**, *m.* field, country.  
**canción**, *f.* song.  
**cansado**, *-a*, tired.  
**cantar**, to sing.  
**cantidad**, *f.* quantity, sum.  
**cañonazo**, *m.* cannon shot.  
**capital**, *m.* capital (*money*).  
**capitán**, *m.* captain.  
**capricho**, *m.* caprice.  
**cara**, *f.* face.  
**carácter**, *m.* character.  
**carcajadas** (á), uproariously.  
**carecer**, to be without, not to  
 have received.  
**carga**, *f.* cargo.  
**cargado**, *-a*, charged.  
**cargar**, to charge.  
**caridad**, *f.* charity.  
**cariñosamente**, lovingly, affec-  
 tionately.  
**caritativo**, *-a*, charitable.  
**Carlos**, Charles.  
**carne**, *f.* meat, flesh.  
**caro**, *-a*, dear.  
**carrera**, *f.* race course, lists, career.
- carta**, *f.* letter; — **de comercio**,  
 business letter.  
**Cartagena**, *a city in Spain*.  
**cartera**, *f.* purse, pocket-book.  
**cartero**, *m.* letter-carrier.  
**casa**, *f.* house, home; — **de**  
**campo**, country house; **salir de**  
 —, to go out.  
**casarse con**, to marry.  
**casi casi**, almost, nearly.  
**casino**, *m.* casino.  
**caso**, *m.* point, case; **del** —,  
 fitting.  
**castigar**, to punish.  
**castillo**, *m.* castle.  
**catedral**, *f.* cathedral.  
**caucho**, *m.* caoutchouc (*rubber*).  
**causar**, to cause.  
**cazador**, *m.* hunter, *chasseur*  
*(light infantry or cavalry)*.  
**cazar**, to hunt.  
**celebrar**, to be glad of.  
**célebre**, celebrated, noted.  
**ceniza**, *f.* ash.  
**censo**, *m.* census.  
**centro**, *m.* center.  
**cerca**, *f.* fence.  
**cerca de**, near.  
**cerro**, *m.* hill.  
**cicuta**, *f.* hemlock.  
**cielo**, *m.* sky, heaven.  
**cien**, hundred.  
**ciencia**, *f.* science.  
**ciento**, hundred.  
**cierto**, *-a*, certain.  
**cinco**, five; **las** —, five o'clock.  
**cincuenta**, fifty.  
**círculo**, *m.* (*social*) club.  
**circunstancia**, *f.* circumstance.  
**ciudad**, *f.* city.  
**civil**, civil.  
**claro**, *-a*, clear.  
**clase**, *f.* class.  
**cobarde**, *m.* coward.  
**cocina**, *f.* kitchen.

- coche**, *m.* carriage, hack.  
**coger**, to take, seize, catch.  
**cólera**, *f.* anger.  
**colmena**, *f.* hive.  
**color**, *m.* color.  
**coloso**, *m.* colossus.  
**combate**, *m.* fight.  
**comedor**, *m.* dining room.  
**comenzar**, to begin.  
**comer**, to eat, dine.  
**comercio**, *m.* business, trade.  
**cometer**, to commit.  
**comisión**, *f.* commission.  
**como**, as, like.  
**cómo**, how?  
**cómodo**, *-a*, comfortable.  
**complacerse** (171, *a*), to take pleasure.  
**componerse**, to be composed.  
**comprar**, to buy.  
**con**, with.  
**conciso**, *-a*, concise.  
**concluir**, to conclude.  
**conclusión**, *f.* conclusion.  
**condenado**, *m.* convict, criminal.  
**condenar**, to condemn.  
**condición**, *f.* condition.  
**conducción**, *f.* hauling, drayage.  
**conducido**, *-a*, led.  
**conducta**, *f.* conduct.  
**conejuelo** (conejo), *m.* little rabbit.  
**confianza**, *f.* confidence.  
**confirmar**, to acknowledge, refer to.  
**conmover**, to move, stir, excite.  
**conocer**, to know, make acquaintance.  
**conocido**, *-a*, known, well-known.  
**conocimiento**, *m.* acquaintance, knowledge, bill.  
**conservar**, to preserve.  
**consignación**, *f.* consignment.  
**consistente**, consisting.  
**cónsul**, *m.* consul.  
**consular**, consular.  
**consultar**, to consult.  
**contar**, to count, relate, tell; —  
**con**, to count on.  
**contarse**, to be told.  
**contener**, to contain.  
**contenido**, *m.* contents.  
**contento**, *-a*, content, satisfied, contented, happy.  
**contestar**, to answer.  
**continuar**, to continue.  
**contradicción**, *f.* contradiction.  
**contrario**, *m.* contrary.  
**contrario** (lo), the contrary.  
**contribuir**, to contribute, pay.  
**contrincante**, *m.* rival.  
**convenio**, *m.* agreement, contract.  
**conversar**, to converse.  
**convidar**, to invite.  
**copa**, *f.* glass.  
**copiar**, to copy.  
**coqueta**, *f.* coquette.  
**corazón**, *m.* heart.  
**cornado**, *m.* mite, farthing.  
**correctamente**, correctly.  
**correo**, *m.* mail, post office  
**correr**, to run.  
**corresponder**, to correspond.  
**correspondiente**, corresponding.  
**corretaje**, *m.* brokerage.  
**corriente**, current; — *m.* current month, instant.  
**cortar**, to cut.  
**cortedad**, *f.* obtuseness, shortsightedness.  
**Cortes** (las), *the Spanish parliament*, The Cortes.  
**cortesía**, *f.* politeness, courtesy.  
**cortésmente**, politely.  
**corto**, *-a*, short, confounded.  
**costoso**, *-a*, costly.  
**crear**, to create.  
**crédito**, *m.* credit.  
**creer**, to think, believe.  
**criado**, *m.* servant.  
**criatura**, *f.* creature.  
**cristiano**, *-a*, Christian.

**crucero, m.** cruiser.  
**crujido, m.** creaking.  
**cruz, f.** cross.  
**Cruz Roja, f.** Red Cross.  
**cosa, f.** thing, fact.  
**costa, f.** coast.  
**costar, to** cost.  
**costoso, -a,** expensive, costly.  
**cualidad, f.** (good) quality.  
**cuán, how.**  
**cuándo, when?**  
**cuando, when.**  
**cuánto, -a,** how much? many?  
**cuanto, -a,** how much, how long.  
**cuarto, -a,** fourth.  
**cuatro, four; las —,** four o'clock.  
**cuello, m.** neck, throat.  
**cuenta, f.** account; — **de venta,**  
 account of sales.  
**cuento, m.** story.  
**cuero, m.** leather.  
**cuerpo, m.** body.  
**cuestión, f.** question.  
**cumplir con, to** fulfill, discharge,  
 keep.  
**cuñada, f.** sister-in-law.  
**cuñado, m.** brother-in-law.  
**curar, to** cure.  
**curiosos, m. pl.** the curious, in-  
 quisitive people.  
**cuyo, -a,** whose, of which.

## D

**dado que, granted that.**  
**dama, f.** lady.  
**dando, giving.**  
**dar, to** give, fall, strike, meet,  
 take or recite (*music lessons*);  
 — **á luz,** to publish; — **de**  
**comer, to** dine (*entertain at*  
*dinner*); — **con,** fall in with.  
**datos, m. pl.** data.  
**de, with, to, on, of, in; — que,**  
 that.

**debe (al), to** the debit, charged.  
**deber, to** owe, ought.  
**deber, m.** duty.  
**decir, to** say, tell.  
**declararse, to** declare oneself, an-  
 nounce.  
**dedicar, to** consecrate, apply,  
 dedicate.  
**dedicarse, to** devote oneself, be  
 engaged in.  
**dedo, m.** finger.  
**defender, to** defend, protect.  
**defensiva, f.** defensive.  
**dejar, to** leave, desert; have.  
**del = de el, of** the.  
**delante, before, in** front.  
**deleitarse, to** be delighted.  
**delicioso, -a,** delightful.  
**delito, m.** fault, delinquency,  
 crime.  
**demasiado, too** much.  
**dentro de, within.**  
**depender, to** depend.  
**dependiente, m.** clerk.  
**derecho, -a, right; —, m.** right.  
**derribar, to** knock down.  
**derrumbarse, to** tumble down.  
**desaparecer, to** disappear.  
**desastre, m.** disaster.  
**descontar, to** discount.  
**descubrir, to** discover.  
**descuento, m.** discount.  
**desde, from, for, since; — que,**  
 since.  
**deseada, f.** favor (*of a letter*).  
**desear, to** desire, wish.  
**desembocadura, f.** mouth.  
**deseo, m.** desire.  
**desgracia, f.** misfortune.  
**desmayarse, to** faint.  
**despacho, m.** office.  
**despedir, to** dismiss, take leave.  
**despotismo, m.** despotism.  
**después, afterwards; — de,**  
 after; — **que,** after that.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



**emplear**, to employ.  
**empresa**, *f.* enterprise, undertaking.  
**empuñar**, to seize; **al —**, on seizing.  
**en**, to, at, on, in.  
**encantador**, *-a*, enchanting.  
**encender**, to light.  
**encontrar**, to find, meet.  
**encontrarse**, to be found, be, meet each other.  
**enemigo**, *m.* enemy.  
**enfermedad**, *f.* sickness, disease.  
**enfermo**, *-a*, sick.  
**enjambre**, *m.* swarm.  
**Enrique**, Henry.  
**enseñar**, to teach.  
**entender**, to understand.  
**entonces**, then, at that time.  
**entrante**, coming, next.  
**entrar (en)**, to enter, come in.  
**entrevista**, *f.* interview.  
**enviar**, to send.  
**época**, *f.* epoch, time.  
**equivalente**, equivalent.  
**escalera**, *f.* stairs, stairway.  
**escapar**, to escape.  
**escape (á todo)**, at full speed.  
**escasez**, *f.* scarcity, lack.  
**esclavo**, *m.* slave.  
**esconderse**, to hide oneself.  
**escribir**, to write.  
**escritorio**, *m.* counting-house, office.  
**escuchar**, to listen to, hear.  
**escuela**, *f.* school.  
**escultura**, *f.* sculpture.  
**ese**, *-a*, that.  
**esfuerzo**, *m.* effort.  
**eso**, that.  
**espacio**, *m.* space.  
**espacioso**, *-a*, broad.  
**espada**, *f.* sword; **á —**, with swords.  
**España**, *f.* Spain.  
**español**, *-a*, Spanish; *m.* Spaniard.

**Española**, Spanish.  
**Espartero** (*proper name*), *Spanish general and statesman.*  
**especial**, special.  
**especialidad**, *f.* (**con**), especially.  
**esperanza**, *f.* hope.  
**esperar**, to hope, wait; **de —**, to be hoped.  
**esquela**, *f.* note.  
**ésta**, here, in this city.  
**estación**, *f.* station.  
**estadista**, *m.* statesman.  
**estado**, *m.* state.  
**Estados Unidos**, *m.* United States.  
**estar**, to be; **— de vuelta**, to return.  
**estatura**, *f.* stature.  
**este**, *-a*, this.  
**éste**, *-a*, this one.  
**estimar**, to esteem.  
**estío**, *m.* summer.  
**estorbar**, to obstruct.  
**éstos**, these.  
**extranjero**, *-a*, foreign.  
**estrecho**, *-a*, strait.  
**estudiar**, to study.  
**estuvieran**, *from estar* (164).  
**excelente**, excellent.  
**exclamar**, to cry, exclaim.  
**excusarse**, to excuse oneself.  
**exhortar**, to entreat.  
**éxito**, *m.* success.  
**explicación**, *f.* explanation.  
**explicar**, to explain.  
**expresión**, *f.* expression.  
**extraño**, *-a*, strange.

## F

**fabricación**, *f.* making.  
**factura**, *f.* bill.  
**falta**, *f.* lack, want.  
**faltar**, to fail, be wanting.  
**familia**, *f.* family.  
**favorecida**, *f.* favor (*of a letter*).

**febrero, m.** February.  
**fecha, f.** date.  
**fechado, -a,** dated.  
**felicitarse,** to congratulate (one-  
 self).  
**Felipe,** Philip.  
**feliz (17),** happy.  
**felizmente,** happily.  
**Fernán Caballero,** *pen-name of the*  
*Spanish writer Cecilia Böhl de*  
*Faber.*  
**ferrocarril, m.** railway.  
**fervor, m.** fervor.  
**festivo (día), m.** holiday.  
**fianza, f.** security.  
**fiarse (de),** to trust in.  
**fidedigno, -a,** trustworthy.  
**fiel,** faithful.  
**fieltro, m.** felt, damper.  
**filosofía, f.** philosophy.  
**filósofo, m.** philosopher.  
**fin, m.** end, limit.  
**firma, f.** firm, signature.  
**flete, m.** freight.  
**fondos, m. pl.** funds.  
**forma, f.** form.  
**fortaleza, f.** fort, fortress.  
**fortuna, f.** fortune, luck.  
**francés, francesa,** French.  
**Francia, f.** France.  
**frente, f.** forehead; **hacer —,** to  
 hold in check.  
**frente á,** off against.  
**fresco, -a,** fresh.  
**frío, -a,** cold.  
**fruta, f.** fruit.  
**fuego, m.** fire.  
**fuelle, f.** source, fountain.  
**Fuente (la),** *Spanish historian.*  
**futuro (lo),** future.

## G

**galgo, m.** greyhound.  
**ganancia, f.** gain.  
**ganar,** to earn, make.

**gastar,** to spend, wear.  
**gasto, m.** expense, cost.  
**gato, m.** cat.  
**general, m.** general.  
**generalmente,** generally.  
**géneros, m. pl.** goods.  
**generoso, -a,** generous.  
**gente, f.** people.  
**gigante, m.** giant.  
**gobernador, m.** governor.  
**gobierno, m.** government.  
**golpe, m.** stroke, blow.  
**gozar,** to enjoy.  
**gozo, m.** joy.  
**gramática, f.** grammar.  
**grande (gran),** large, great.  
**granero, m.** barn.  
**grata, f.** favor (*of a letter*).  
**grato, -a,** pleasant.  
**Grecia, f.** Greece.  
**griego, -a,** Greek.  
**guardar,** to guard, keep, protect.  
**guerra, f.** war.  
**gustar,** to please, suit.  
**gusto, m.** pleasure.

## H

**ha, ago.**  
**Habana,** Havana (*capital of Cu-*  
*ba*).  
**haber (al),** to the credit.  
**habiendo,** *from haber (164).*  
**habitación, f.** room.  
**habitar,** to inhabit.  
**hablar,** to speak, talk.  
**hace, ago.**  
**hacer,** to do, make, build; —  
**frente á,** to hold in check, face;  
 — **las suyas,** to play one's  
 tricks; — **venir,** to send for;  
 — **se,** to be made; — **se con,**  
 to procure, obtain.  
**hacienda, f.** exchequer, treasury,  
 farm.



**halagüeño, -a**, flattering.

**hallar**, to find.

**han**, *from haber* (164).

**hasta**, until, as far as, up to; —  
**que**, until; — **la vista**, good-  
by, see you again.

**hay**, there is, are.

**haya**, *from haber* (164).

**hayamos**, *from haber* (164).

**hecho, -a**, *from hacer* (218).

**hembra, f.** female, girl.

**hender**, to split.

**hermana, f.** sister; — **de caridad**,  
*f.* sister of charity.

**hermanita, f.** little sister.

**hermano, m.** brother.

**heroicamente**, like a hero, hero-  
ically.

**hiena, f.** hyena.

**hierro, m.** iron.

**hija, f.** daughter.

**hijita, f.** little daughter.

**hijito, m.** (little son), darling.

**hijo, m.** son; —s, children.

**Hill**, *proper name*.

**historia, f.** history.

**hombre, m.** man.

**honor, m.** honor.

**honradez, f.** honesty.

**honrado, -a**, honored.

**honrar**, to honor.

**hora, f.** hour, o'clock.

**horrible**, horrible.

**hospital, m.** hospital.

**hospitalidad, f.** hospitality.

**hoy**, to-day.

**huele, from oler (193).**

**huelga, f.** strike.

**huerto, m.** garden, orchard.

**huésped, m.** guest *or* host.

**huevo, m.** egg.

**huír**, to flee, run away.

**humanidad, f.** humanity.

**humano, -a**, human.

**hundirse**, to sink, founder.

**idea, f.** idea.

**ídem**, the same, ditto.

**idioma, m.** language.

**iglesia, f.** church.

**igual**, alike, equal.

**igualar**, to equal.

**ilustre**, illustrious.

**imperfecto, m.** imperfect (tense).

**imperio, m.** empire.

**impermeable, m.** raincoat, water-  
proof.

**impertinencia, f.** impertinence.

**impío, -a**, wicked.

**importar**, to be important.

**importe, m.** amount.

**importunar**, to importune, trouble.

**imposibilidad, f.** impossibility.

**imposibilitar**, to incapacitate.

**imposible**, impossible.

**improbable**, improbable.

**impuesto, -a**, informed.

**impuro, -a**, impure.

**incapaz** (17), incapable, unfit.

**incendio, m.** fire.

**indicar**, to point out, indicate.

**indispensable**, indispensable.

**indispuesto, -a**, indisposed.

**individuo, m.** member.

**industrial**, business, industrial.

**inferior**, inferior, lower.

**influencia, f.** influence.

**informar**, to inform.

**infundado, -a**, groundless.

**inglés, inglesa**, English.

**ingratitude, f.** ingratitude.

**inmortalidad, f.** immortality.

**insistir**, to insist.

**inspección, f.** inspection.

**instante, m.** instant, time, mo-  
ment.

**instar**, to urge.

**instrucción, f.** instruction.

**insulto, m.** insult.

**intención, f.** intention.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

## Ll

**llamado, -a**, called.

**llamar**, to call, attract.

**llegar**, to arrive; — **á ser**, to become.

**llevar**, to bear, carry, bring, lead, carry off; — **á cabo**, complete, finish.

**llevarse**, to carry off.

**lluvia, f.** rain, shower.

## M

**madre, f.** mother.

**Madrid (the capital of Spain),** Madrid.

**maestra, f.** queen (of bees).

**maestro, m.** master, teacher, *maestro*; — **de música**, music teacher.

**magnífico, -a**, splendid, magnificent.

**majestuoso, -a**, majestic.

**mal, m.** harm, evil; — badly; — (27).

**malo, -a**, sick, bad, ill.

**mamá, f.** mother, mamma.

**manantial, m.** spring.

**mandar**, to send, order; — **á decir**, to send word.

**mandarse**, to be ordered.

**mandato, m.** command, order.

**mando, m.** command.

**manejar**, to work.

**manera, f.** manner; **de tal** —, in such a way.

**mano, f.** hand.

**mantener (164)**, to maintain.

**mantilla, f.** mantilla (a kind of cloak used by Spanish women to cover the head and shoulders).

**Manuel Quevedo**, proper name.

**manzana, f.** apple.

**manzano, m.** apple tree.

**mañana, f.** morning; **tan de** —,

so early in the morning; — **por la tarde**, to-morrow afternoon; *adv.* to-morrow.

**mar, m. or f.** sea, ocean.

**maravilloso, -a**, wonderful.

**marcar**, to mark.

**marcharse**, to go away, depart.

**marítimo, -a**, marine.

**martes, m.** Tuesday.

**Martínez**, proper name.

**marzo, m.** March.

**mas**, but.

**más**, more, most, further; — **que**, any more; **los** —, the most, most.

**matar**, to kill.

**maternal, maternal**, native.

**maullar**, to mew (as a cat).

**mayo, m.** May.

**mayor**, greater, most.

**mayor (por)**, wholesale.

**medio, m.** means.

**medio, -a**, half.

**meditar**, to meditate, think.

**mejor**, better.

**mejorar**, to better, improve.

**melocotón, m.** peach.

**Mendelssohn**, German musician.

**menor (por)**, retail.

**menos**, less.

**mente, f.** mind.

**menudo (á)**, often.

**menudos, m. pl.** petties (various small sums).

**mercado, m.** market(place).

**merecer**, to merit, deserve.

**merendar**, to lunch.

**merienda, f.** luncheon.

**mero, -a**, mere.

**mes, m.** month.

**mesa, f.** table.

**metal, m.** metal.

**meterse**, to put oneself, get.

**mi, pl. mis**, my.

**mí, me.**

- miedo**, *m.* fear.  
**miércoles**, *m.* Wednesday.  
**mil**, thousand.  
**millón**, *m.* million.  
**mina**, *f.* mine.  
**mineral**, *m.* mineral.  
**ministro**, *m.* minister, secretary.  
**minuto**, *m.* minute.  
**mío**, *-a*, my.  
**mirada**, *f.* look, eye.  
**misa**, *f.* mass.  
**mismo**, *-a*, same.  
**mitad**, *f.* half.  
**moda**, *f.* mode, fashion, style.  
**modelo**, *m.* model.  
**modo**, *m.* manner.  
**momento**, *m.* moment, instant.  
**moneda**, *f.* coin, money.  
**monólogo**, *m.* solo.  
**montado**, *-a*, mounted.  
**montaña**, *f.* mountain.  
**montecillo** (*from monte*), *m.* hill.  
**morada**, *f.* mansion.  
**morder**, to bite.  
**morir**, to die.  
**motivo**, *m.* motive, spirit.  
**muchacha**, *f.* girl.  
**muchachita**, *f.* little girl.  
**muchacho**, *m.* boy.  
**muchísimo**, very, very much.  
**mucho**, *-a*, much, great, many, long.  
**muerte**, *f.* death.  
**muerto**, *-a* (*morir*), killed, dead.  
**mujer**, *f.* woman, wife.  
**mundo**, *m.* world; **todo el** —, everybody.  
**muralla**, *f.* rampart, wall.  
**música**, *f.* music.  
**muy**, very, dear (*in letterheads*).

## N

- nacer**, to be born.  
**nada**, nothing, anything.  
**nadie**, no one, anyone.

- naipe**, *m.* (playing) card.  
**naranja**, *f.* orange.  
**natural**, natural.  
**naturaleza**, *f.* nature.  
**naufragar**, to strand.  
**naufragio**, *m.* shipwreck.  
**necesitar**, to need.  
**negar**, to deny.  
**negocio**, *m.* business.  
**neto**, *-a*, net.  
**ni**, nor.  
**nieve**, *f.* snow.  
**ninguno**, *-a*, no, none, any.  
**nifita**, *f.* little girl.  
**nifito**, *m.* little child.  
**niño**, *m.* child.  
**no**, no, not.  
**noche**, *f.* evening, night; **esta** —, to-night.  
**nombre**, *m.* noun, name.  
**Norte**, *m.* North.  
**nos**, to us, us.  
**nosotros**, *-as*, we.  
**nota**, *f.* note, mark.  
**noticia**, *f.* notice, news.  
**novecientos**, *-as*, nine hundred.  
**novelista**, *m. and f.* novelist.  
**noviembre**, *m.* November.  
**novios**, *m. pl.* bride and groom.  
**nube**, *f.* cloud.  
**nuestro**, *-a*, our.  
**nuevo**, *-a*, new.  
**numerario**, *m.* cash.  
**número**, *m.* number.  
**nunca**, never.

## O

- o**, or.  
**obedecer**, to obey.  
**obra**, *f.* work, execution.  
**obrar**, to act.  
**obrero**, *m.* workman.  
**ocasión**, *f.* opportunity, occasion.  
**océano**, *m.* ocean.

**octubre, m.** October.  
**ocupar, to occupy.**  
**ocurrido (lo), what had happened,**  
 occurrence.  
**ocurrir, to occur.**  
**ocho, eight; las —, eight o'clock.**  
**ofender, to offend.**  
**ofrecerse, to offer, subscribe one-**  
 self.  
**oír, to hear.**  
**ojo, m.** eye.  
**oler, to smell.**  
**once (las), eleven o'clock.**  
**ópera, f.** opera.  
**operación, f.** operation.  
**opinión, f.** opinion.  
**opondremos (nos), from oponerse.**  
**oponerse (222), to oppose.**  
**opuesto, -a, opposite.**  
**ora, now.**  
**orador, m.** speaker, orator.  
**orden, m.** order.  
**ordinario, -a, ordinary.**  
**orilla, f.** bank, shore.  
**orillas de la mar, seashore, sea-**  
 side.  
**oro, m.** gold.  
**os, you, to you.**  
**ostra, f.** oyster.  
**otorgar, to grant.**  
**otro, -a, other, another.**  
**oveja, f.** sheep.  
**ovejita (oveja), f.** little sheep.  
**Oviedo, town in Spain.**

## P

**padre, m.** father; *m. pl.* parents.  
**pagar, to pay.**  
**pagaré, m.** promissory note.  
**pago, m.** pay, payment.  
**país, m.** country.  
**pajarillo (pájaro), m.** little bird.  
**palabra, f.** (*word*), floor.  
**palacio, m.** palace.

**pan, m.** bread.  
**pañuelo, m.** handkerchief.  
**papá, m.** father, papa.  
**Papa, m.** Pope.  
**papel, m.** paper.  
**para, to, in order to, for; — con,**  
 to, towards; — **que, that, so**  
 that, in order that.  
**paraguas, m.** umbrella.  
**parar, to ward off, parry.**  
**parecer, to seem.**  
**pariente, m.** relative, parent.  
**París, Paris** (*capital of France*).  
**parque, m.** park.  
**parte, f.** part, piece; **en todas**  
 —s, everywhere; **de mi —,**  
 for me.  
**partido, m.** profit, result, game,  
 party.  
**partir, to set out, start, depart.**  
**pasado (lo), past (time).**  
**pasado, -a, last, past.**  
**pasar, to pass, cross.**  
**pasearse, to promenade; — en**  
**coche, to drive.**  
**paseo, m.** promenade, walk; **á**  
 —, to walk, promenade.  
**pasión, f.** passion.  
**pasivo, m.** liabilities.  
**paso, m.** way, passage.  
**patio, m.** yard.  
**patria, f.** fatherland.  
**patriota, m.** patriot.  
**paz, f.** peace.  
**pecado, m.** sin.  
**pedacito, m.** scrap.  
**pedazo, m.** piece.  
**pedido (lo), what was asked for,**  
 request.  
**pedir, to beg, request.**  
**pegar, to join, beat.**  
**peleado, having fought.**  
**pelear, to fight.**  
**peligro, m.** danger.  
**peligroso, -a, dangerous.**



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



**prima**, *f.* cousin.  
**primavera**, *f.* spring.  
**primer** (27), first.  
**primero**, *-a*, first.  
**primeros** (á), about the first.  
**principiar**, to begin.  
**principio**, *m.* beginning.  
**privilegio**, *m.* privilege.  
**probar**, to prove.  
**problema**, *m.* problem.  
**producido**, *m.* proceeds.  
**producir**, to produce.  
**proferir**, to utter.  
**profundo**, *-a*, profound, deep.  
**progreso**, *m.* progress.  
**prójimo**, *m.* neighbor.  
**promesa**, *f.* promise.  
**prometer**, to promise.  
**promiscuo**, *-a*, promiscuous.  
**propio**, *-a*, own, self.  
**proponer**, to propose (222).  
**proposición**, *f.* proposition.  
**protesta**, *f.* protest.  
**proveer**, to provide for.  
**provincia**, *f.* province.  
**próximo**, *-a*, next.  
**proyecto de ley**, *m.* bill.  
**público**, *-a*, public, known; gov-  
 ernment.  
**pudimos**, *from poder* (230).  
**punte**, *m.* deck, bridge.  
**puerta**, *f.* gate, door.  
**puerto**, *m.* port.  
**pues**, since.  
**puesta**, *f.* setting.  
**puesto**, *m.* place, position.  
**punta**, *f.* end, point.  
**punto**, *m.* point, place.  
**puro**, *m.* cigar.

## Q

**que**, that, when, than, as, whether,  
 for, because; which, who, what;  
 — **sí**, yes; — **no**, no.

**quebrantarse**, to be broken (down).  
**quebranto**, *m.* damage, shock.  
**quedar(se)**, to remain, be; —  
**corto**, to be nonplussed, con-  
 founded.  
**quehaceres**, *m. pl.* duties.  
**quejarse**, to complain.  
**querer**, to wish, love.  
**queridísimo**, *-a*, dearest.  
**quiebra**, *f.* failure.  
**quien**, he who, who, and he; —  
 . . . —, some . . . others.  
**quiero** (**querer**), I wish.  
**quince**, fifteen.  
**quinientos**, *-as*, five hundred.  
**quitar**, to take (away), deprive.

## R

**radical**, radical.  
**raramente**, rarely, seldom.  
**raro**, *-a*, scarce.  
**rato**, *m.* while, moment.  
**rayo**, *m.* lightning, flash.  
**razón**, *f.* reason.  
**Real**, Royal.  
**recibir**, to receive.  
**recibo**, *m.* receipt.  
**recitar**, to recite.  
**recomendación**, *f.* recommenda-  
 tion.  
**recompensa**, *f.* reward.  
**reconocer**, to recognize.  
**recordar** (188), to remember.  
**recurso**, *m.* recourse.  
**rechazar**, to reject.  
**rededor de** (**al**), around.  
**referirse**, to refer, recall.  
**reflexionar**, to reflect.  
**refrán**, *m.* proverb.  
**refuerzo**, *m.* reënforcement.  
**regalo**, *m.* present, gift.  
**régimen**, *m.* regimen.  
**regimiento**, *m.* regiment.  
**regir**, to rule, govern.

**regla**, *f.* rule.  
**rehusar**, to refuse.  
**reina**, *f.* queen.  
**reinar**, to reign.  
**reír**, to laugh; —**se**, to ridicule, mock.  
**reiterar**, to repeat, reiterate.  
**religión**, *f.* religion.  
**reloj**, *m.* watch, clock.  
**remediar**, to remedy.  
**remitir**, to send, remit.  
**rendirse**, to surrender.  
**renombre**, *m.* renown.  
**renovar**, to renew.  
**repente (de)**, suddenly.  
**repetir**, to repeat.  
**repetirse**, to reiterate, repeat.  
**república**, *f.* republic.  
**resbalar**, to slip.  
**residencia**, *f.* residence.  
**resolver**, to resolve.  
**respecto**, in regard.  
**respetable**, respected.  
**responder**, to answer.  
**restante**, *m.* remainder.  
**resultado**, *m.* result.  
**resultar**, to turn out, result; — **muerto**, —**a**, to be killed.  
**retiro**, *m.* retreat.  
**retrato**, *m.* portrait.  
**reunión**, *f.* assembly.  
**reunirse**, to meet (*each other*).  
**revelar**, to reveal.  
**reverendo**, —**a**, reverend.  
**revolución**, *f.* revolution.  
**revolver**, to turn, cast.  
**rey**, *m.* king.  
**ridículo**, —**a**, ridiculous.  
**riesgo**, *m.* risk.  
**rigor**, *m.* rigor.  
**río**, *m.* river.  
**rival**, *m.* rival.  
**rogar (188)**, to ask, beseech.  
**rollo**, *m.* roll.  
**ropa**, *f.* clothes.

**rosa**, *f.* rose.  
**ruego**, *m.* supplication, instance.  
**rumbo**, *m.* course.  
**rumor**, *m.* rumor.

## S

**saber**, to know.  
**sacar**, to get, obtain.  
**saco**, *m.* sack, bag.  
**sala de patinar**, *f.* skating rink.  
**salario**, *m.* hire, salary.  
**saldo**, *m.* balance.  
**salida**, *f.* rise, rising.  
**salir**, to come *or* go out, start, set out; — **á paseo**, to go out walking; —**se con la suya**, to carry one's point.  
**salteador de camino**, highwayman.  
**salud**, *f.* health.  
**saludando**, saluting.  
**saludar**, to salute, present one's regards.  
**salvaje**, *m. and f.* savage.  
**salvar**, to save.  
**salvo**, —**a**, safe.  
**sangre**, *f.* blood.  
**sano**, —**a**, sound, healthy.  
**Santiago de Compostela**, St. James of Compostela (*city in Spain*).  
**santo**, —**a**, saintly, holy.  
**santuario**, *m.* shrine.  
**sarao**, *m.* entertainment, party.  
**satisfacer**, to satisfy.  
**sed**, *f.* thirst.  
**sedicioso**, *m.* rioter.  
**seguida (en)**, at once, immediately.  
**seguir**, to follow, continue, go on.  
**según**, as, according as.  
**segundo**, —**a**, second.  
**seguro**, *m.* insurance; — **de incendio**, fire insurance.  
**seguro**, —**a**, sure, certain.



**seis**, six; — **por ciento**, six per cent; **las** —, six o'clock.  
**semana**, *f.* week.  
**semejanza**, *f.* resemblance.  
**Senado**, *m.* Senate.  
**senador**, *m.* senator.  
**sentar**, to suit, become, fit.  
**sentarse**, to sit down, be seated.  
**sentir**, to regret, feel.  
**señor**, *m.* Mr., sir, gentleman.  
**señora**, *f.* lady, madam, Mrs.; — **parienta**, *f.* wife.  
**señorita**, *f.* young lady, Miss.  
**separarse**, to separate.  
**septiembre**, *m.* September.  
**sequedad**, *f.* drought.  
**ser** (164), to be; **á no** — **por**, but for.  
**serio**, *-a*, serious.  
**servicio**, *m.* service.  
**servidor**, *m.* servant.  
**servir**, to serve.  
**servirse**, to please, be pleased, help oneself.  
**setenta** (seventy), three score and ten.  
**seudónimo**, *m.* pseudonym, pen-name.  
**sí**, yes.  
**sí**, him, himself, herself, themselves.  
**si**, whether, if.  
**sido**, been (*from ser*).  
**siempre**, ever, always.  
**siendo**, *from ser* (164).  
**siete** (las), seven o'clock.  
**siglo**, *m.* century.  
**significado**, *m.* meaning.  
**significar**, to mean.  
**siguiente** (lo), the following.  
**silencio**, *m.* silence.  
**silla**, *f.* chair.  
**sillón**, *m.* arm-chair.  
**sin** (que), without, when.  
**sinónimo**, *-a*, synonymous.  
**sobre**, *m.* envelope.

**sobre**, on, upon, over.  
**sobrina**, *f.* niece.  
**sobrino**, *m.* nephew.  
**sociedad**, *f.* company, society.  
**Sócrates**, Socrates (*Greek philosopher*).  
**sofá**, *m.* sofa.  
**sol**, *m.* sun.  
**solas** (*á*), alone.  
**soldado**, *m.* soldier.  
**solo**, *-a*, alone, single.  
**sólo**, only, merely.  
**sombra**, *f.* shadow.  
**sombrero**, *m.* hat.  
**sorprender**, to surprise.  
**sosegar**, to quiet.  
**soy**, *from ser* (164).  
**su**, *sus*, his, her, its, your, their.  
**subido**, *-a*, high.  
**subir**, to come up, ascend, run up, amount.  
**subscribirse**, to subscribe.  
**sucursal**, *m.* branch.  
**sufrir**, to suffer.  
**suicidio**, *m.* suicide.  
**Sur**, *m.* South.  
**suyo** (lo), one's own, his own.

## T

**tabaco**, *m.* tobacco.  
**tal**, such a.  
**taller**, *m.* shop.  
**también**, also, likewise.  
**tampoco**, just as little, either.  
**tan**, so, as, such a.  
**tanto**, *-a*, so many; as much, so much; **entre** —, in the meantime.  
**tardanza**, *f.* delay.  
**tardar**, hesitate, be long, delay.  
**tarde**, *f.* afternoon.  
**tarde**, late; **más** —, later.  
**tarea**, *f.* task.  
**taza**, *f.* cup.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

**venidero, -a**, coming.  
**venir**, to come; — **á ser**, to become.  
**venta, f.** sale.  
**ventana, f.** window.  
**ventanilla (ventana), f.** little window.  
**ver**, to see.  
**veranear**, to summer, pass the summer.  
**verano, m.** summer.  
**verbo, m.** verb.  
**verdad, f.** truth, true.  
**verdadero, -a**, true, real.  
**vestido, -a**, dressed.  
**vestidos, m. pl.** clothes.  
**vestirse**, to dress, be clothed.  
**vez (pl. veces), f.** time; **rara** —, seldom; **otra** —, once more; **en** —, instead.

**viaje, m.** trip, journey.  
**viajero, m.** traveler.  
**vida, f.** life.  
**viejo, -a**, old.  
**viernes, m.** Friday.  
**vista, f.** view, sight.  
**vivir**, to live.  
**volar**, to fly.  
**volver**, to turn, return.  
**votar**, to vote, pass (*by voting*).

### Y

**y**, and.  
**ya**, already, now; — **no**, no longer.  
**yo**, I.

### Z

**zapatón (zapato), m.** large shoe.

# ENGLISH VOCABULARY

## A

- abandon (to)**, abandonar.  
**about**, á eso de.  
**absence**, ausencia, *f.*  
**absent**, ausente.  
**abstain (to)**, abstenerse (164).  
**accept (to)**, aceptar.  
**accommodation**, conveniencia, *f.*  
**accompany (to)**, acompañar.  
**accomplish (to)**, efectuar, cumplir.  
**according to**, según.  
**accustomed (to be)**, acostumbrar.  
**acorn**, bellota, *f.*  
**across**, al través de.  
**action**, acción, *f.*  
**actor**, actor, *m.*  
**actress**, actriz, *f.* (17).  
**admiration**, admiración, *f.*  
**admit (to)**, admitir.  
**advance (to)**, avanzar.  
**advantage**, ventaja, *f.*  
**advertisement**, anuncio, *m.*  
**afternoon**, tarde, *f.*; **this** —, esta tarde.  
**against**, contra.  
**ago**, hace (*before the number*) or ha (*after the noun*).  
**all**, todo, -a; — (97, 20), todos.  
**all** (283, 30), todo lo que.  
**all that**, todo lo que.  
**all the time**, siempre.  
**all those who**, todos los que.  
**allow (to)**, permitir.  
**alone**, solo, -a.  
**already**, ya.  
**always**, siempre.  
**American**, americano, -a.  
**amiable**, amable.  
**among**, entre.  
**amuse oneself (to)**, gozarse.  
**an**, uno, -a (12, NOTE).  
**and**, y.  
**announce (to)**, anunciar.  
**another**, otro, -a.  
**answer (to)**, contestar, responder.  
**apartment**, aposento, *m.*  
**appeal (to)**, to the law, pedirle en justicia.  
**apply (to)**, dirigirse (171, 8).  
**arise (to)**, levantarse.  
**arm**, brazo, *m.*  
**army**, ejército, *m.*  
**arrive (to)**, llegar (171, 2); — (*by water*), arribar.  
**artist**, artista, *m.*  
**as well as**, tan bien como.  
**ask (to)**, preguntar, pedir.  
**astonish (to)**, sorprender.  
**at**, á; — (107, 22), en.  
**attack**, ataque, *m.*  
**attacked**, atacado, -a.  
**attain to (to)**, alcanzar.  
**attempt (to)**, intentar.  
**attend** (= *be present at*), asistir á.  
**attribute (to)**, atribuir (206).  
**avenge (to)**, vindicar.  
**axis**, eje, *m.*

## B

- bad**, malo, -a (27).  
**band**, música, *f.*  
**Barcelona**, Barcelona.

**be in (to)**, *estar* (164).  
**because**, *porque*.  
**bed**, *cama*, *f.*  
**been**, *sido* (164).  
**before** (*prep. of time*), *antes de*;  
*(prep. of place)*, *delante de*;  
*adv.* *antes*.  
**begin (to)**, *principiar*; — (171, 4,  
 185), *empezar*.  
**believe (to)**, *creer*.  
**belong (to)**, *pertenecer*.  
**beloved**, *amado*, *-a*, *querido*, *-a*.  
**beneficial**, *benéfico*, *-a*.  
**best**, *el, la mejor*; — (97, 22), *el  
 mejor*.  
**better**, *mejor*.  
**between**, *entre*.  
**Bible**, *Biblia*, *f.*  
**bill**, *proyecto de ley*, *m.*  
**bird**, *pájaro*, *m.*  
**birth**, *el nacer*.  
**black**, *negro*, *-a*.  
**bless (to)**, *bendecir* (217).  
**blood**, *sangre*, *f.*  
**blue**, *azul*.  
**board**, *bordo*, *m.*  
**boat**, *bote*, *m.*  
**book**, *libro*, *m.*  
**borrow (to)**, *pedir* (202) *prestado*,  
*-a*.  
**bread**, *pan*, *m.*  
**breakfast**, *almuerzo*, *m.*  
**break out (to)**, *estallar*.  
**bring (to)**, *traer* (214).  
**brother**, *hermano*, *m.*  
**but**, *mas, pero*.  
**but little**, *poço*.  
**buy (to)**, *comprar*.  
**by**, *por*.

## C

**call (to)**, *llamar, pasar*.  
**candidate**, *candidato*, *m.*  
**capital**, *capital*, *f.*

**capture (to)**, *capturar*.  
**career**, *carrera*, *f.*  
**carriage**, *carruaje*, *m.*  
**carrier (letter-)**, *cartero*, *m.*  
**carry (to)**, *llevar*.  
**case (in that —)**, *en ese caso*.  
**cases (in some) . . . in others**,  
*ora . . . ora*.  
**Castilian**, *castellano*, *-a*.  
**castle**, *castillo*, *m.*  
**cat**, *gato*, *m.*  
**cause**, *causa*, *f.*  
**cause (to)**, *causar*.  
**cave**, *cueva*, *f.*  
**cease (to)**, *cesar*.  
**cent**, *centavo*, *m.*  
**certain**, *cierto*, *-a*.  
**chain**, *cadena*, *f.*  
**chair**, *silla*, *f.*  
**change (to)**, *cambiar de*.  
**charge**, *cargo*, *m.*  
**chasseur**, *cazador*, *m.*  
**child**, *niño*, *m.*  
**children**, *hijos*, *m.*  
**church**, *iglesia*, *f.*  
**circumstance**, *circunstancia*, *f.*  
**citizen**, *ciudadano*, *m.*  
**city**, *ciudad*, *f.* (17).  
**claim**, *derecho*, *m.*  
**classroom**, *sala de clase*, *f.*  
**cloak**, *capa*, *f.*  
**cloth**, *pañó*, *m.*  
**coinage**, *acuñación*, *f.*  
**colt**, *potro*, *m.*  
**come (to)**, *venir* (223).  
**come down (to)**, *bajar*.  
**come out (to)**, *salir*.  
**comical**, *cómico*, *-a*.  
**coming** (158, 41), *que viene*.  
**conclude (to)**, *concluir* (206).  
**condemn (to)**, *condenar*.  
**conduct**, *conducta*, *f.*  
**connection**, *conexión*, *f.*  
**consent**, *consentimiento*, *m.*  
**consequently**, *por consiguiente*.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



eloquently, elocuentemente.  
 employed, empleado, -a.  
 encharged, encargado, -a.  
 end, fin, *m*.  
 enemy, enemigo, *m*.  
 enjoy (to), gozar de.  
 enough, bastante.  
 enter (to), entrar (*use en before object*).  
 entertain (to), abrigar.  
 entertaining, divertido, -a.  
 entrance, entrada, *f*.  
 entrenchment, trinchera, *f*.  
 error, error, *m*.  
 esteem (to), estimar.  
 Europe, Europa, *f*.  
 evening, noche, *f*.  
 even though, aunque.  
 ever, siempre (256, 18).  
 everybody, todo el mundo, *m*.  
 excellent, excelente.  
 exclaim (to), exclamar.  
 excuse (to), dispensar, excusar.  
 execute (to), ejecutar.  
 exhibition, exhibición, *f*.  
 exist (to), existir.  
 expect (to), esperar.  
 explanation, explicación, *f*.  
 extreme, extremo, *m*.

## F

face (273, 22), disco, *m*.  
 fail (to), dejar.  
 fairy, hada, *f*.  
 farther end, fondo, *m*.  
 fatal, fatal.  
 fault, error, *m*.  
 fear (to), temer.  
 feat, hecho, *m*.  
 fellow (87, 20), semejante, *m*.  
 few, poco, -a.  
 field, campo, *m*.  
 Fifth Avenue, Quinta Avenida, *f*.  
 fifty, cincuenta.

fight (to), combatir.  
 find (to), encontrar, hallar.  
 find out (to), cerciorarse.  
 finger, dedo, *m*.  
 finish (to), acabar.  
 fire, fuego, *m*.  
 first, primero, -a (27).  
 fishing, á la pesca.  
 five, cinco; — o'clock, las cinco.  
 flatter oneself (to), lisonjearse.  
 fleet, armada, *f*.; escuadra, *f*.  
 flock, manada, *f*.  
 Florida, Florida, *f*.  
 for (107, 35), por; (154, 29; 154, 43), para.  
 force (to), forzar.  
 foreign, extranjero, -a.  
 forget (to), olvidar.  
 form (to), formar.  
 formerly, antes.  
 fort, fortaleza, *f*.  
 fortunate, afortunado, -a.  
 fortune, fortuna, *f*.  
 forty, cuarenta.  
 four o'clock, las cuatro.  
 France, la Francia.  
 free, libre.  
 French, francés, francesa.  
 frequent (to), frecuentar.  
 Fridays, los viernes.  
 friend, amigo, *m*.  
 from, de.  
 fruit, fruta, *f*.  
 furious, furioso, -a.  
 furniture, mueblaje, *m*.

## G

gallop (to), galopar.  
 general, general, *m*.  
 geography, geografía, *f*.  
 German, alemán, alemana.  
 giant, gigante, *m*.  
 give (to), dar (210).  
 glass, copa, *f*.

glibly (very), muy al pelo.  
 go (to), ir (235).  
 go out (to), salir (220).  
 God, Dios, *m.*  
 gold, oro, *m.*  
 good, bueno, -a; (158, 35), bien.  
 goods, generos, *m. pl.*  
 governess, aya, *f.*  
 gray, pardo, -a.  
 Great Britain, la Gran Bretaña.  
 great, grande (27, b).  
 greater, mayor.  
 guard (to), guardar.

## H

hall, vestíbulo, *m.*  
 happen (to), suceder.  
 happy, contento, -a.  
 hard, con ahinco.  
 hazard (at all —), á pesar de todo.  
 health, salud, *f.*  
 heaven, cielo, *m.*  
 help (to), ayudar.  
 her, su, sus; — (obj. of verb), la.  
 here, aquí.  
 hero, héroe, *m.*  
 him, él (obj. of prep.).  
 him, le (obj. of verb).  
 his, su, sus.  
 historian, historiador, *m.*  
 history, historia, *f.*  
 holiday, día festivo, *m.*  
 home (to —), á casa; at —, en casa.  
 honest, probo, -a.  
 honorable, honrado, -a.  
 hope (to), esperar.  
 hope, esperanza, *f.*  
 horse (riding), caballo de silla, *m.*  
 hour, hora, *f.*  
 house, casa, *f.*; little —, caseta, *f.*  
 how long? cuánto tiempo?  
 hymn, himno, *m.*

idea, idea, *f.*  
 if, si.  
 impatient (to be —), tener impaciencia, *f.*  
 impetuous, impetuoso, -a.  
 impossible, imposible.  
 in, en.  
 incredible, increíble.  
 infernally (most), infernalísimamente.  
 inform (to), informar.  
 inkstand, tintero, *m.*  
 instinct, instinto, *m.*  
 intend (to), destinar.  
 interest (to), interesar.  
 intrigue, intriga, *f.*  
 invest (to), invertir.  
 investigation, investigación, *f.*  
 invite (to), convidar.  
 iron, hierro, *m.*  
 it (obj. of verb), lo; (obj. of prep.), ello; (158, 29), ello; (258, 25), lo; (*f.*), la.  
 its, su, sus.

## J

Japan, el Japón.  
 Juan Valera, Spanish author.  
 judge, juez, *m.*  
 jury, jurado, *m.*

## K

kind, género, *m.*; (139, 46), especie, *f.*; clase, *f.*; of the —, de eso.  
 king, rey, *m.*  
 king-and-queen, los reyes.  
 knife, navaja, *f.*  
 know (of persons), conocer; (304, 24), saber (230).

## L

lack, falta, *f.*  
 lady, dama, señora, *f.*



land, tierra, *f.*  
 landlord, huésped, *m.*  
 language, lengua, *f.*; idioma, *m.*  
 later, más tarde.  
 laugh (to), reír (203).  
 lawyer, abogado, *m.*  
 learn (to), aprender.  
 leave (to), partir; (119, 29), de-  
 jar.  
 left, izquierdo, -a.  
 lesson, lección, *f.* (283, 12).  
 let (to), permitir, dejar.  
 letter, carta, *f.*  
 letter-box, buzón, *m.*  
 lie (to), mentir (195).  
 life, vida, *f.*  
 like, como.  
 line (= *side*), lado, *m.*  
 literature, literatura, *f.*  
 little, poco; — by —, poco á  
 poco.  
 little-house, caseta, *f.*  
 live (to), vivir.  
 loan (to), prestar.  
 long, largo, -a.  
 longer, más.  
 look for (to), buscar (171, 1).  
 lose (to), perder; — one's way,  
 perderse.  
 lost, perdido, -a.  
 love, amor, *m.*  
 lyrical, lírico, -a.

### M

made (97, 15), hechas.  
 make (to), hacer; — (= *to gain*),  
 ganar.  
 malicious, malicioso, -a.  
 man, hombre, *m.*  
 manners, modales, *m. pl.*  
 many, mucho, -a, -os, -as.  
 mare, yegua, *f.*  
 marry (to), casarse con.  
 me, me (58).

meaning, significado.  
 meet (to), encontrar.  
 merit (to), merecer.  
 milk, leche, *f.*  
 ministry, ministerio, *m.*  
 mistake, falta, *f.*; error, *m.*  
 modern, moderno, -a.  
 Monday, lunes, *m.* (139, 22).  
 money, dinero, *m.*  
 month, mes, *m.*  
 moon, luna, *f.*  
 moral, moral.  
 more, más; any —, más; —  
 than, más que.  
 morning, mañana, *f.*  
 mortal, mortal.  
 mother, madre, *f.*  
 much, mucho, -a.  
 murderer, asesino, *m.*  
 my, mi, mis.  
 myself (149, 23), me.

### N

name, nombre, *m.*  
 national, nacional.  
 nature, la naturaleza.  
 near to, cerca de.  
 necessary, preciso, necesario.  
 need (to), necesitar.  
 neigh (to), relinchar.  
 neighbor, prójimo, *m.*  
 nephew, sobrino, *m.*  
 never, nunca, jamás.  
 news, noticia, *f.*  
 newspaper, periódico, *m.*  
 next, siguiente; — week, la  
 semana entrante.  
 night, noche, *f.*  
 nightfall, anochecer, *m.*  
 nightingale, ruiseñor, *m.*  
 nine o'clock, las nueve.  
 noble, noble.  
 noon, mediodía, *m.*



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

praise (to), loar.  
 praise oneself (to), alabarse.  
 precede (to), preceder.  
 prefer (to), preferir (195).  
 prefers (119, 26), prefiere.  
 premature, prematuro, -a.  
 present, actual.  
 present, regalo, *m*.  
 present oneself (to), presentarse.  
 president, presidente, *m*.  
 pretty, hermoso, -a.  
 prevail (to), prevalecer.  
 price, precio, *m*.  
 principal, principal.  
 prisoner, preso, *m*.  
 produce (to), producir.  
 professor, catedrático, *m*.; **Profes-**  
 sor (= *title*), Profesor, *m*.  
 prolong (to), prolongar.  
 promise (to), prometer.  
 pronoun, pronombre, *m*.  
 proper (it is —), conviene.  
 proposition, propósito, *m*.; propo-  
 sición, *f*.  
 proverb, refrán, *m*.  
 public, municipal, público, -a.  
 pull (to), sacar.  
 pupil, discípulo, *m*.  
 purse, bolsa, *f*.  
 put (to), meter.

## Q

quality, calidad, *f*.  
 queen regent, reina regente, *f*.  
 quickly (more), más de prisa.

## R

rain, lluvia, *f*.  
 rain (to), llover (181).  
 reach (to), alcanzar.  
 read (to), leer.  
 reason, razón, *f*.  
 recede (to), retroceder.  
 receive (to), recibir.  
 recital, representación, *f*.

recite (to), dar.  
 recognize (to), reconocer.  
 record, hoja de servicios, *f*.  
 reference, respecto, *m*.  
 refuse (to), rechazar.  
 regiment, regimiento, *m*.  
 regret (to), sentir (195).  
 reënforcements, refuerzos, *m. pl.*  
 reject (to), rechazar.  
 remain (to), quedar.  
 remedy, remedio, *m*.  
 renew (to), renovar.  
 rent (to), alquilar.  
 repent (to), arrepentirse.  
 reply (to), responder.  
 represent (to), representar.  
 republic, república, *f*.  
 reputation, reputación, *f*.  
 request (to), pedir (202).  
 residence, morada, *f*.; domicilio, *m*.  
 resolve (to), resolverse.  
 resource, medio, *m*.  
 rest (to), descansar.  
 restaurant, fonda, *f*.  
 result, resultado, *m*.  
 retire (to), acostarse.  
 return (to), volver (192).  
 return (= *to give back*), devolver.  
 revolution, revolución, *f*.  
 reward, premio, *m*.  
 rise (to), levantarse.  
 risk (to), arriesgar.  
 rob (to), robar.  
 robber, robador, *m*.  
 robust, robusto, -a.  
 Roman, romano, *m*.  
 Rome, Roma, *f*.  
 Romulus, Rómulo.  
 ruby, rubí, *m*.  
 run (to), correr.

## S

Sabine, sabino, -a.  
 sacrifice (to), sacrificar.  
 safe, salvo, -a.

- sally forth (to)**, salir.  
**same**, mismo, -a.  
**satellite**, satélite, *m.*  
**satisfied**, contento, -a.  
**say (to)**, decir (216).  
**scandalous**, escandaloso, -a.  
**scene**, paisaje, *m.*  
**scholar**, discípulo, *m.*  
**seamstress**, costurera, *f.*  
**second**, segundo, -a.  
**Second**, Segunda (*street*); —  
**Street**, Calle Segunda.  
**see (to)**, ver (226).  
**seek (to)**, buscar (171, 1).  
**seem (to)**, parecer; it —s,  
parece.  
**sell (to)**, vender.  
**senator**, senador, *m.*  
**send (to)**, mandar, enviar.  
**serious**, grave.  
**set out (to)**, partir.  
**several**, alguno, -a, varios, -as.  
**shadow**, sombra, *f.*  
**shame**, vergüenza, *f.*  
**sharp**, agudo, -a.  
**sheep**, oveja, *f.*  
**sheepfold**, aprisco, *m.*  
**ship**, barco, *m.*  
**shipwreck**, naufragio, *m.*  
**shore**, orilla, *f.*  
**short-time**, poco, *m.*  
**sick**, malo, -a.  
**side**, lado, *m.*  
**silver**, plata, *f.*  
**similar**, tal.  
**since (prep.)**, desde.  
**sing (to)**, cantar.  
**singing**, cantar, *m.*  
**sink (to)**, hundirse.  
**sister**, hermana, *f.*  
**sister-in-law**, cuñada, *f.*  
**six o'clock**, las seis.  
**sky**, cielo, *m.*  
**slander (to)**, calumniar.  
**slowly**, despacio.  
**slumber**, sueño, *m.*  
**small (very)**, pequeñísimo, -a.  
**snow**, nieve, *f.*  
**so**, que sí (144); (280, 30),  
tan.  
**so much**, tanto.  
**society**, sociedad, *f.*  
**soldier**, soldado, *m.*  
**someone**, alguien.  
**something indefinite**, algo inde-  
terminado.  
**sound**, sano, -a.  
**South**, mediodía, *m.*  
**Spain**, España, *f.*  
**Spanish**, español, -a.  
**speak (to)**, hablar; so to —, por  
decirlo así.  
**speaking**, hablar, *m.*  
**speech**, discurso, *m.*  
**speed (at full)**, á todo correr.  
**spend (to)**, pasar (*of time*); gastar.  
**spite (in — of)**, á pesar de.  
**spite (in) of all**, á pesar de todo.  
**spring**, verano, *m.*  
**spur up (to)**, picar.  
**square**, plaza, *f.*  
**stairs**, escalera, *f.*  
**stake (to)**, postar.  
**stand (to)**, estar.  
**star**, estrella, *f.*  
**start (to)**, partir; — off, partir;  
— out, salir.  
**statesman**, estadista, *m.*  
**station**, estación, *f.*  
**statue**, cuerpo, *m.*  
**stay (to)**, quedarse.  
**stay away (to)**, ausentarse.  
**steal (to)**, robar.  
**steel**, acero, *m.*  
**steward**, mayordomo, *m.*  
**still**, todavía.  
**stir**, ruido, *m.*  
**stone**, piedra, *f.*  
**stove**, estufa, *f.* —  
**Street**, Calle, *f.*

**strength**, fuerza, *f.*  
**study (to)**, estudiar.  
**substance**, sustancia, *f.*  
**succeed (to)**, acertar.  
**success**, éxito, *m.*  
**such a**, tal.  
**suffice (to)**, bastar.  
**sufficient**, bastante.  
**sun**, sol, *m.*  
**sup (to)**, cenar.  
**surer**, más certero, -a (97, 22).  
**surgeon**, médico, *m.*  
**surprise (to)**, sorprender.  
**surprised (to be)**, extrañar.  
**surround (to)**, rodear.  
**swallow (throat)**, trago, *m.*  
**swear (to)**, jurar.  
**sweet**, dulce.

## T

**take (to)**, tomar; — from (273, 27), quitar; — advantage of, aprovechar.  
**task**, tarea, *f.*  
**teacher**, maestro, *m.*  
**telegraph (to)**, telegrafiar (171, b).  
**tell (to)**, decir (216).  
**ten**, diez; — o'clock, las diez.  
**tenth**, diez (*date*).  
**than**, que.  
**that (demonstrative)**, aquel, aquella; — (*conjunction*), que; — (273, 21), el.  
**theater**, teatro, *m.*  
**thee**, te.  
**their**, su, sus.  
**them**, les.  
**themselves**, sí.  
**then**, entonces.  
**there (154, 30)**, allá.  
**thereupon**, con eso.  
**these**, estos, -as.  
**thief**, ladrón, *m.*  
**think (to)**, pensar (185), creer; — fit, creer del caso.

**third**, tercero, -a (27).  
**this**, este, esta.  
**thousand**, mil.  
**three**, tres.  
**thy**, tu, tus.  
**time**, tiempo, *m.*; in —, á tiempo; by this —, ya; this —, esta vez; at that — entonces.  
**times (= occasions)**, veces (17).  
**tired**, cansado, -a.  
**to**, á.  
**to-day**, hoy.  
**to-morrow**, mañana.  
**to-morrow morning**, mañana por la mañana.  
**tone**, tono, *m.*  
**to-night**, esta noche.  
**torpedo-boat**, torpedero, *m.*  
**train**, tren, *m.*  
**travel (to)**, viajar.  
**treaty**, tratado, *m.*  
**trickle**, escurrir.  
**trip**, viaje, *m.*; vuelta, *f.*  
**trolley**, tranvía eléctrico, *m.*  
**tropical**, tropical.  
**trouble oneself (to)**, molestarse.  
**true**, verdadero, -a; it is —, es verdad.  
**trunk**, baúl, *m.*  
**truth**, verdad, *f.*  
**try (to)**, tratar; — to, tratar de.  
**Tuesdays**, los martes.  
**twenty**, veinte.  
**two**, dos.

## U

**uncle**, tío, *m.*  
**understand (to)**, entender (de).  
**United States**, los Estados Unidos.  
**university**, universidad, *f.*  
**until**, hasta.  
**us (object of verb)**, nos (58).  
**use (to)**, usar.  
**useful**, útil; **very** —, utilísimo, -a.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies





# INDEX

The references are to the sections

- á**, 150.  
**á que**, 159, *d.*  
abbreviations, 335.  
**acabar de**, 237.  
accentuation, 9.  
accusative, personal, 263.  
accusative, simple, 264.  
adjectives, 26; position of, 31;  
    agreement, 34; comparison, 38.  
adverbs, 140; comparison of, 145.  
agreement, 268.  
**ajeno**, 121.  
**algo**, 110.  
**alguien**, 109.  
**alguno**, 122.  
**ambos**, 123.  
anterior, past, 281.  
apocopation, 27.  
article, 12; definite, use of, 249; in-  
    definite, 254.  
augmentatives, 46.  
auxiliaries, modal, 230.  
*become*, how to translate, 245.  
business forms, 342.  
*by* translated by **por** or **de**, 175.  
**cada**, 124.  
**cada uno**, 111.  
capitals, 11.  
cardinals, 51-52.  
**cierto**, 125.  
conditional, 286.  
conditional perfect, 287.  
conjunctions, 159.  
**cosa**, 110.  
**cuál**, 102.  
**cualquiera**, 126.  
**cuanto**, 93.  
**cuánto**, 104.  
**cuyo**, 92.  
**cúyo**, 101.  
dative, 262.  
**de**, 151.  
**de que**, 159, *e.*  
declension, 13.  
demonstratives, 80-85.  
diminutives, 47.  
**donde**, 95 and 144.  
**é**, 159, *f.*  
**echar**, 247.  
elision, 6.  
**el que**, **el cual**, 91.  
**en**, 152.  
**entero**, 135, NOTE.  
**estar**, 164; uses of, 18 and 165.  
formalities, epistolary, 336.  
formation of tenses, 173.  
forms of address, 316.  
fractions, 54.  
**fulano**, 113.  
future, 284.  
future perfect, 285.  
gender, 21.  
genitive, 261.  
gerund, 312.  
*get*, how to translate, 245.  
**haber**, 164; uses of, 165.  
imperative, 177, NOTE, and 288.  
imperfect tense, 275.  
indefinite adjectives, 120.  
indefinite pronouns, 108.  
indicative, tenses of, 274-287.  
infinitive, 305-309.



- interjections, 160.  
 interrogative pronouns, 98.  
 le (pronoun), 117.  
 letters, 340.  
 lo que, lo cual, 94.  
  
 memory-aids to conjugations, 172.  
 mengano, 113.  
 mismo, 128.  
 muchísimo, 145, NOTE.  
 mucho, 129.  
  
 nada, 112.  
 nadie, 114.  
 ninguno, 130.  
 nominative, 260.  
 nouns, cases of, 259.  
 number, 17.  
 numerals, 51.  
  
 ó, 159, *b*.  
 ordinals, 53.  
 orthographic changes, 171.  
 otro, 131.  
  
 para, 156.  
 participle, past, 314.  
 participle, present, 312.  
 passive constructions, 175.  
 passive voice, 174.  
 past participles, irregular, 243.  
 perfect, 279.  
 pluperfect, 280.  
 poco, 132.  
 por, 155.  
 possessive adjectives, 65.  
 preterit, 278.  
 pronouns, cases of, 259.  
 pronouns, personal, 58; position of, 59.  
 pronouns, possessive, 74.  
 pronunciation, 1-9.  
 punctuation, 10.  
  
 que (relative), 89.  
 que (conjunction), 159, *c*.  
  
 qué, 100.  
 qué tal, 103.  
 qué tanto, 105.  
 quien, 90.  
 quién, 99.  
 quienquiera, 116.  
  
 reflexive verbs, 176-177.  
 relative pronouns, 88.  
  
 seguir, 168, *a*.  
 sendos, 133.  
 ser, 164; uses of, 18 and 165.  
 si, 159, *g*.  
 sino, 159, *a*.  
 subjunctive, 291-302.  
 syllabication, 8.  
  
 tal, 134.  
 tal . . . cual, 93.  
 tanto . . . cuanto, 93.  
 tener, 164; uses of, 14 and 165-166.  
 than, how to translate, 146.  
 todo, 135.  
  
 ú, 159, *b*.  
 único, 137.  
 uno, 116.  
  
 venir, 168, *a*.  
 verb, syntax of, 267.  
 verbs, defective, 238.  
 verbs, impersonal, 181.  
 verbs, irregular, 182.  
 verbs, irregular, list of, 248.  
 verbs, reciprocal, 180.  
 verbs, regular, 163-170.  
 volver á, 246.  
  
 word order, 267.  
  
 y, 159, *f*.  
  
 zutano, 113.



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

**SAVE \$3,999,994**

Did you know we sell  
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog  
in paperback would cost  
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for  
\$8.99/month

\*Fair usage policy applies

**Continue**

# MARTIN'S FRENCH VERB

By Lieutenant CHARLES F. MARTIN, Instructor in  
Modern Languages, United States Military Academy.

\$1.25

**T**HIS work teaches the student how to use the French verb at the same time that he learns to conjugate it. It shows him what preposition, if any, follows a verb before an infinitive, and also how to form a sentence with the verb. For this purpose complete conjugations of all kinds of French verbs are given, and their idiomatic use is carefully illustrated. Verb lists are included, with questions in English to be translated by the student. The verb dictionary gives the idiomatic use of all verbs offering peculiarities or difficulties.

# TUCKERMAN'S READER OF FRENCH PRONUNCIATION

By JULIUS TUCKERMAN, Head of the Modern Language Department, Central High School, Springfield, Mass.

\$0.50

**A** SIMPLE and very rapid method of mastering French pronunciation, which can also be used as a first reading book. The introduction of only a single new difficulty in each exercise enables the student to fix his attention on the one sound he is studying without being distracted by a large number of rules and exceptions. At the same time the constant review in each lesson of sounds already studied strengthens his hold on the knowledge acquired. The vocabulary contains every form occurring in the text.

By H. A. GUERBER ·

## EASY FRENCH PROSE COMPOSITION

\$0.25

**T**HIS prose composition is based on Guerber's *Contes et Légendes*, Part I, which it is planned to accompany, though it is adapted also for independent use. The exercises consist of English parallel versions of each of the twenty-five selections, with the necessary indications of the correct renderings. Suggestions are afforded regarding words to be omitted and others which will aid in the translation. No vocabulary is included, since the pupil will find in the original text all the data necessary for correct and easy translation. The principle of constant repetition found in the stories is applied throughout the exercises.

## JOAN OF ARC—FRENCH COMPOSITION

\$0.30

**T**HE composition work in this book is based on the principle that the best results can be obtained through the use of material which is both interesting and consecutive. The life and exploits of Joan of Arc are presented in the form of a continuous narrative, which is written in an agreeable style, and adapted especially to the purpose in view. Copious foot-notes indicating by rearrangement of the English words the equivalent French construction, and a full vocabulary, are included. The book is intended as a bridge between the customary grammar work and the writing of connected passages based on the works of various authors read.

# TWO GERMAN READERS

By MENC0 STERN

|   |        |
|---|--------|
| Geschichten vom Rhein . . . . .             | \$0.85 |
| Geschichten von Deutschen Städten . . . . . | 1.25   |

**T**HESSE two collections of stories are designed to arouse and stimulate the pupil's interest, not only while he is struggling with the difficulties of German grammar, but even after he has successfully completed the study. They make him acquainted with the German people, and describe faithfully the various sections of the German Empire, portraying their local color, and giving their local traditions.

¶ These volumes, each containing nearly one hundred stories, furnish interesting reading-matter, and include, besides, valuable suggestive material for exercises in conversation and composition. They are well suited for intermediate and advanced grades, and provide excellent preparation for the reading of the German classics. Both books have been recommended for schools by the New York State Education Department.

¶ While each chapter is complete in itself, yet taken together, they form a complete whole, and afford a good general acquaintance with the scenes in which they are laid. In *Geschichten von Deutschen Städten*, the stories commence with the cities on the coast of the North Sea, and progress through the leading towns of the German Empire. In *Geschichten vom Rhein*, the reader starts from the source of the Rhine, and follows it throughout its course. These sketches all portray the romance of Germany—its scenery, cities, castles, and homes, interweaving with the descriptions the legends and folk-lore of the people. They do not, however, consist of fiction only, but furnish also many facts of historical, geographical, and literary importance. The vocabularies, which have been carefully compiled, furnish ample aid. The maps help show the significance of the tales.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY



**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



# A THREE YEAR COURSE IN FRENCH

By L. C. SYMS, B. ès L., L. en D., De Witt Clinton  
High School, New York

|                                 |        |
|---------------------------------|--------|
| First Year in French . . . . .  | \$0.50 |
| Second Year in French . . . . . | 1.00   |
| Third Year in French . . . . .  | 1.20   |

**T**HIS comprehensive course in French teaches pupils not only to read but also to speak and write the language correctly. In the First Year the early lessons contain only the names of common objects while the later ones include short stories which are not intended to be translated into English. In the Second Year an almost equal amount of time is given to reading, conversation, translation, and grammar. Particular stress is laid upon the study of verbs. A short story or description forms the basis of each lesson, illustrating a grammatical principle and affording an easy and pleasant subject for conversation. The more difficult aspects of French grammar and syntax are treated in the Third Year, and unusual attention is given to all points likely to prove especially confusing. The progressive reading lessons are such as will prepare the student to read the masterpieces of French literature. Each book contains vocabularies.

**SYMS'S EASY FIRST FRENCH READER. \$0.50**

**T**HESE stories and poems have, for the most part, been selected from the works of Octave Feuillet, É. Laboulaye, Hégésippe Moreau, Félix Gras, and other well known writers. The text is easy and progressive, proceeding from the very simple to the more difficult by a regular gradation. Following the reading material, and based on it, are short English exercises to be translated into French, vocabularies, etc.

**AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY**